

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

## Authors Information

**Natela Doghonadze**

School of education and humanities, International Black Sea University, Georgia

## Correspondence

Natela Doghonadze, School of education and humanities, International Black Sea University, Georgia , Tel +9995593378929, Email [nateladoghonadze@ibsu.edu.ge](mailto:nateladoghonadze@ibsu.edu.ge)

**Published By:**

**MedCrave Group LLC**

January 02, 2023

## *Contents*

1.	Abstract	3
2.	Introduction	4
3.	Great fathers of great children	5
	Musicians	5
	Writers	7
	Politicians	8
	Artistic professions	9
	Sports	15
	Science	17
4.	Special fathers	20
5.	Book and movie character fathers	24
6.	Fathers who ruined / complicated their children's lives a lot	35
7.	Some interesting facts, traditions, and regulations dealing with fatherhood	39
8.	My father	40
9.	People's letters and stories	43
10.	My research articles dealing with fatherhood issues	57
	Parents-school cooperation and fathers' role in it	57
	Father's role in sons' and daughters' upbringing	60
	Content analysis of interview on engaged fatherhood	85
11.	Some tips, if you do not mind	92
12.	Appendix	60,92
13.	Acknowledgements	94
14.	References	94

## Abstract

The book is dedicated to the topic of fatherhood. It is addressed to future fathers and also those fathers who want to be thoughtful ones, to learn on other people's positive and negative experiences. Although nowadays fathers are more involved in their children's lives than they used to a few decades ago, children still often lack their support. The goal of the book is to inform people of outstanding fatherhood and to persuade them to be more involved in their children's lives. The author tried try to motivate fathers to be closer to their children, not simply to spend time on/with and money on them, but also to contribute to their children's care,

warmth, strength, moral support, life knowledge, and the desire to learn. The book discusses the roles and relationships between great fathers and children, fathers of great children, as well as just special fathers. Then it follows with literature and movie examples on the issues, her own father and stories sent to her by volunteers. The book contains some information about horrible fathers – in order not to follow their example. It also includes three researches by the author on the given topic. In the end, the author tries to give some tips based on the discussed cases.

**Keywords:** fatherhood, masculinity, parental involvement, fathers' engagement

Dedicated to my father Revaz (Rezo) Dogonadze, outstanding Georgian scientist, one of the founders of Quantum Electrochemistry and Electrochemical Physics

## Introduction

There are myriads of paintings, books, stories, poems, songs, articles, and movies dedicated (more than fairly!) to mother's role in people's lives. However, father is also a great figure, whose role in children's lives is often largely underestimated. My father played a huge role in my life. Whatever I know, however I feel, whatever I am interested in largely derives from my father's place in my life. My wide and deep knowledge, my various interests, and – what is especially important – my ability to think logically, critically, analytically, and creatively – are the gains that would have been impossible without my father.

Luckily, I am not a special case from this point of view, and there are so many people in the world to whose development father contributed greatly. This triggered my desire to help other people become as lucky as I was, to pay a greater attention to fathers' role in children's lives. Doing scientific research on the topic, of course, is great, on the other hand, spreading the common knowledge as well as the scientific findings to all people: (future) fathers, mothers who grow up (future) fathers, – is very important, too. In this book I will try to combine both – to present some famous as well as common people's of the past and present, real and imaginary stories and researchers' (including my own) findings on the issue.

Nowadays when we speak so much about gender equality, we need to keep in mind that fathers, not only mothers, have rights, but also DUTIES in front of their children. There still is a strange misconception from the past that a father has mainly to make money to enable his children to be healthy and well educated, to have a good home (Do you remember the proverb 'The man has to build a house, to plant a tree and to grow up a son?') and a well-off comfortable life. On the other hand, whether we say so or not, we realize that money alone cannot bring health, education, and, eventually, happiness, while honestly earned money (and being a model of honesty), evenings spent together, sharing the values (work, love, family, kindness, and knowledge), working and entertaining together can do that even without much money.

There is one more strange misconception that having a father is crucially important for boys, and less important for girls, as father is a role model for boys. Well, what about a father being a role model for a girl's future husband or son? Isn't that important?! What about the most important man in her life who teaches her to be a woman, to feel beautiful and loved, to learn to care for others, etc.?!

One more misconception – in the past fathers cared for the financial well-being of the family, while mothers cared for children and a cozy house, but nowadays both of them share both responsibilities. Maybe statistically this is true and today more fathers take part in caring for children than in the past, but such fathers have always existed, so it is a man's natural function.

The goal of my book is to inform people of outstanding fatherhood and to persuade them to be more involved in their children's lives. I will do my best to try to motivate fathers to be closer to their children, not simply to spend time with / on them, but also to contribute to their children's care, warmth, strength, moral support, life knowledge, and the desire to learn. I will try to change – at least a bit – the society view on fatherhood in (as it is so fashionable to say nowadays) the 21<sup>st</sup> century.

I could not have covered all aspects of the topic, as they are so numerous. Probably, if I live long enough to publish the second edition of the book, I would add chapters about step-fathers (and/or other people who substitute fathers to children), young / inexperienced fathers, first-time fatherhood, fathers of many children, single fathers, feelings of a man who learns that he's going to be a father, and some more. But, if I do not, I would also be happy if somebody else does it instead.

Maybe this book disagrees with some 21<sup>st</sup>-century tics about saying 'parent number one' and 'parent number two'. Well, I apologize if I hurt their feelings and suggest that they simply do not read this book. However, from this point of view one can call me a conservative person, as I prefer (whenever available) to use the words 'mother' and 'father'.



## Chapter 1: Great fathers of great children

“Our Father, who art in heaven...” The majority of us (even those who belong to other than Christianity confessions) know this prayer, addressed to God. And – although feminists may have some other ideas about God's gender – we are all God's children and to Him we owe not only ‘our daily bread’, but also the ability to forgive, to fight the temptation of evil, and to be happy.

Not all great fathers had great children. There are many reasons for that: the fathers were too busy with their own achievements to spend sufficient time with their children, the children did not choose to follow the fathers' steps, as they were afraid to be compared (in favour of the fathers), the children mostly inherited the mothers' genes, etc.

Neither did all great children have great fathers, but there are so many stories in which, irrespective all talent, we would not have had geniuses unless their fathers had noticed the godly sparkle in them and had supported this sparkle to become a great fire. Let us recollect some of them.

I would like to start with King George III (Bagrationi) of Georgia and his daughter, Queen (or, as we call her in Georgia, King) Tamar. King George had no sons and was preparing his daughter to be the monarch of Georgia, so he gave her the best available at that time education and discussed with her political issues. However, he realized that there would be people who would mind a woman ruling the powerful at that time country. So, for five years he ruled the country hand in hand with her, to persuade everybody how wise she was. After his death there was no doubt that she should continue leading the country to become the most powerful one in the Caucasus. There still were efforts to bring to power a ‘real’ king, however, Tamar, who had gained experience of being the head of the country in the difficult period of uniting it against the feudal efforts to tear the country into pieces, became one of the greatest kings of Georgia in its golden period. Decisive and wise like her father, diplomatic and patient as a woman, she developed in the increased during her more than 20 years' rule country. Somebody may say that King Tamar became what she became due to her position in society and her genetics, and not because her father took part in her development. The idea is doubtful – many rulers (mostly masculine) had the position and the genetics, but not all of them were really outstanding. I deeply believe that the lack of father's participation in their lives was among the major factors why it did not happen.

During the middle ages it was typical that a musician's son became a musician, a painter's son – a painter, a builder's son – a builder, etc. It was the cheapest and the easiest way to pass the profession / occupation from father to son, as the disciple had a free-of-charge teacher and the necessary equipment. There are at least 5 famous fathers and sons in classical music: the Scarlattis, the Bachs, the Wagners, the Mozarts, and the Strausses.<sup>1-3</sup>

## Musicians

### The Bachs

I will not speak about the whole Bach dynasty, in which there were several generations of musicians, but it is impossible not to mention the great German musician Johann Sebastian Bach and his four sons who became outstanding composers and musicians: Wilhelm Friedemann Bach, Carl Philipp Emanuel Bach, Johann Christoph Friedrich Bach, and Johann Christian Bach. Besides, his daughter Catharina Dorothea Bach was a good singer and

often helped her father with his work. All Bach's children learnt their father's lessons, but interpreted them in different aesthetics, which proves him to be a great teacher and father, whatever challenges might have existed in their relations.

Johann Sebastian Bach (1685-1750) was the eighth, youngest child in the family, who was a houseman and a musician. It is impossible to say much about the father and the son relationship, as Johann Sebastian's father died when he was a little boy, but he was adopted by Johann Pachelbel, who taught him to play the organ. When in Weimar, he earned the title of *Konzertmeister* (concertmaster) and had six children. Later he moved to Cöthen where he became *Kapellmeister* (chapel master). He mostly played the organ music composed by himself. Later he became Kantor at the Thomasschule - he was responsible for the music of the four main churches in the town. Totally Johann Sebastian Bach had 20 children from two wives, 10 of whom lived till adulthood. Johann Sebastian Bach kept various musical instruments at home. However busy he was, he found time to write music especially for his wife (who was a singer) and children. Having so many children, he could not make them really well-off, but they inherited his musical talent and received their first music lessons from their father, playing under his guidance, watching him play and copying notes for him. One cannot say that Johann Sebastian had perfect relations with his children. He was a strict and demanding father, as it was typical for his time.

The eldest and the most beloved, Wilhelm Friedemann Bach was 10 when his mother died, and his father was not at his side at the moment. Probably, this is because Johann Sebastian, feeling guilty, supported him most. Wilhelm Friedemann Bach played the organ and a violin and composed cantatas, chamber music, and an opera. Johann Sebastian Bach wrote a music course book *Klavierbüchlein für Wilhelm Friedeman* for his elder son – the book which was later often used to train musicians. Father as a teacher, father who creates educational materials for his son – what a pity that this tradition has almost been forgotten! Wilhelm Friedemann Bach created symphonies and choral music. It looks like Wilhelm Friedeman was either not talented enough or lazy, as his father had to push him forward a lot, sometimes co-writing the son's early works, but then submitting them as completely his son's. Later in his career, allegedly, the son ascribed some of his father's works to himself. Well, the father did his best, maybe the son abused his father's love and care, but, unfortunately, it often happens. Anyway, his life was successful enough and that was largely due to his father.

Carl Philippe Emanuel Bach was a harpsichordist. He worked as music director in Hamburg. He created symphonies and choral music. Besides, he was one of the first musical critics who wrote an *Essay on the True Art of Playing Keyboard Instruments*. Many musicians, including Mozart and Beethoven, learned with the book. Mozart even wrote that “Bach is the father and we all are the children,” meaning Carl Philippe Emanuel Bach, and not his great father. It was Carl Philippe Emanuel Bach who preserved most of his father's work, as he realized his father's greatness. However, in his own compositions, Carl Philippe Emanuel Bach, denied his father's achievements, and had his own, original style.<sup>4</sup>

Johann Christoph Friedrich Bach, also known as Buckeburg Bach worked as a harpsichordist in the chamber orchestra at the Buckeburg court and was eventually appointed concertmaster. His works include sonatas, symphonies, and liturgical choir pieces.

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Johann Christian Bach, also called the English Bach, took his first music lessons from his father and later from his elder half-brother Karl Philippe Emanuel. He was an organist in Milan and later the music master for Queen Charlotte of England. He composed cantatas, chamber music, orchestral works, and operas.

Of course, all Bach's children inherited musical abilities from their father, however, the fact that it was he who found the time and energy to teach them music played a decisive role in enabling them to leave their mark on the history of musical culture.<sup>4-6</sup>

## The Mozarts

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart was born in 1756 in Salzburg and died in Vienna in 1791. His father Johann Georg Leopold Mozart was a court composer in Salzburg, a city famous for its cultural traditions situated between Bavaria and Austria, independent of both. Contemporaries described Leopold Mozart as domineering. Leopold Mozart was not only a good violinist and a conductor, he was an effective teacher, musical course book author and a keen-eyed traveler (which was reflected in his pages-long letters). Some of his pupils recollected him as a pleasant person, however, more pupils remembered him as a stern man.

He and his obedient wife had seven children, five of whom died in infancy, which made the couple unhappy. But the children who survived brought them much happiness. The Mozarts had a clavier at home, and music was regularly heard in the family. The elder surviving daughter at the age of seven started showing interest to music, and her father eagerly started teaching her music.

Baptized as Johannes Chrisostomus Wolfgangus Theophilus Mozart, Wolfgang more often used "Amadeus" (or spelled the French way Amad ) which means the same as "Theophilus" as his second name. When Leopold Mozart's son at the age of three revealed his musical gift, it took father some time to notice that, as he was quite busy with his daughter's music lessons. Wunderkinder (wonder children) were numerous in Germany of that time, however, Wolfgang was the only one who remained as appraised and talented in his adulthood. It was not only the wide public, but also his contemporaries as great as Goethe and Haydn who recognized Mozart's greatness.

Leopold's wife and children could not take part in making any decisions in the family. Leopold Mozart was a demanding father and teacher, he maintained control over his children's studies even when he was not in Salzburg. He required that his wife controlled that the children were working hard. On the other hand, he always proudly said that his children were used to work hard. What's interesting is that Wolfgang was an ever-smiling, happy with his talent and popularity boy, so, probably, his father's pressure did not make him suffer as much as somebody might expect.

According to Mozart's sister's, Maria Anna's (called Nannerl in the family) memoirs, their father taught them not only how to play music, but also how to behave in front of the public. By keeping hands calm on their laps for some time before they started to play, they would focus the attention of the public, he told them. Their father always praised them in front of the audience (Leopold called his son "a prodigy of nature"), he underlined his children's young age and great achievement in performing music. Father helped the little genius of a son, looking so tiny, get on the chair, which touched the audience's hearts even before Mozart started playing. It was a little advertising trick, of course, however, it should have been inspiring for the children, too (many children

long for such words, but never hear them!). And they must have wanted to persuade the public and dad that he was true.<sup>7</sup>

To impress the audience even more, father asked Wolferl (this is how they called Wolfgang in the family) to play with one finger, then with the keyboard hidden from him with a black cloth. Wolferl played in duet with his sister and in trio with his father. The idyllic family picture must have been very touchy, although, while teaching them to perform, their relations were not that perfect. Of course, at home father shouted and punished, when they could not play as well as he wanted, but they seldom disappointed him. The three-hour-long concerts were also quite exhausting, but Wolfgang liked the applause and the kisses he received. They got various gifts and money (the latter mattered so much for their father), however, Wolfgang mostly cared about the love he obtained. Their father was a great entrepreneur, managing to make the most of the public's admiration, but, as an entrepreneur, he was cruel, too. Poor Nannerl with great bitterness remembered the day when her father stopped taking her to concerts, as she was already 13, and there were many girls at that age who could play well, and he wanted his musicians to be unique, not simply very good.

One day Wolfgang showed a piece to his father saying it was a concerto. Leopold first did not take it seriously, but, having read the piece, he was so proud. When apart, father and son wrote letters to each other during life. Realizing that his son was a genius, Leopold kept all his letters, planning in the future to write his biography. The biography was never written, but the letters were preserved due to his father's ambitions. Wolfgang, on the other hand, never kept his obtrusive father's letters. Anyway, he always answered them, often quite rudely, but ever commenting on each criticism. Who knows, maybe Wolfgang's music would have never been so brilliant unless his father criticized him.

Wolfgang was not too practical. As long as his father led his career, it brought him popularity and money. Leopold took his little son to a three-year-and-a-half long tour to Munich, Mannheim, Paris, London, Dover, the Hague, Amsterdam, Utrecht, Mechelen and Zurich. This tour made Mozart famous all over Europe. Another tour – to Italy, organized by his father, lasted over a year. He himself could not so well do it, so his tyrannical father's role in his life should not be perceived as negatively as it often is.<sup>7-9</sup>

## The Strausses

Johann Strauss, Sr. (1804-1849) is believed to be the father of waltz. Johann's mother dies when he was seven, his father remarried, but was soon drowned. Then his step-mother remarried. He wasn't born or grown in a family of musicians, he was a tailor's and later bookbinder's apprentice but he loved music and had a good musical ear. A family legend said that his step-father, a kindly man, gave the boy a violin. He eventually became a self-taught musician, performing music for the military. Later he started composing his own waltzes, polkas and other dances. It was him who made waltz popular first in Vienna, then in Austrian Empire, and then all over the world. People, independent of their social status, danced crazily under his music in the special dancing halls and in the streets. Some pregnant women started labor due to dancing, so some hosts kept a special room and a doctor for such cases.

His son, Johann Strauss, Jr. (1825-1899) is considered the king of waltz. He wrote 500 waltzes, polkas, quadrilles, marches, mazurkas, and gallops; 18 operettas, and one ballet. His *Blue*

*Danube* and *Tales from the Vienna Woods*, have made hearts beat faster for almost two centuries. Millions of people since then have wanted to come to Vienna in order to listen to their music performed at the Kursalon where Johann, Jr. played his temperamental violin and conducted the orchestra and Schonbrunn Palace where every summer Vienna Philharmonic Orchestra performs his exciting music under the open sky and shining like himself stars. Contemporary listeners may be disappointed when they see the far from blue Danube and fail to find the Vienna Woods, however, their romantic images keep living in their hearts even after this disappointment. His younger brothers Josef Strauss (1827-1870) and Eduard Strauss I (1835-1916) initially had different plans, but then joined in the family orchestra. Joseph worked as a draughtsman for an architect, but, after joining his brother, wrote over 300 dances and marches and created many arrangements of other composers' works. Edward became a harpist and a conductor, like his eldest brother.

Johann Strauss, Sr. did not want his elder son to become a musician – was it due to the desire to keep him off the difficulties of musicians' lives or due to narcissistic love of himself and lack of desire to have one more rival at his side, who knows? The father whipped the son cruelly when he discovered that he was secretly taking violin lessons from the first violinist of his orchestra. Johann, Jr. bitterly suffered from his father's rude and unfaithful behavior towards their mother. When the son grew, the father and the son often quarreled.

Only after the father abandoned the family for a mistress did Johann, Jr. concentrate on the career of composer and musician, to support financially his beloved mother. He made his debut in 1844 and very soon became more popular than the father, so decide yourselves, what moved both in this competition. However, after the father's death both orchestras were merged into one.

When in 1853 Johann had a nervous breakdown and went to cure to the countryside Joseph was persuaded by the family to take his place until he recovered. Edward joined the orchestra in 1862 and he and Joseph led it until 1870. The two brothers agreed that whoever of them would live longer would destroy their manuscripts, in order that nobody could claim he wrote it. In-family and beyond-family rivalry made their lives difficult, but at the same time fuelled with passion. So, what we hear today as the Strauss music may sound somehow different from what they initially wrote.

The waltz – so seemingly simple – in three-four time, was born and whirled the heads not only of young silly pretty girls, but grey-haired solid men and women, too. Men and women so close to each other, so equal, with their hearts beating in this in-born for us igniting rhythm. Composers before the Strauss dynasty wrote waltzes, but it was them and Johan, Sr.'s friend and later rival and even enemy Joseph Lanner who made them so loved and at the same time respected. This 'dance', 'light' music became part of musical masterpieces.

The music created by the Strauss family was so harmonious, it expressed so well the spirit of one of the most elegant cities in the world whose buildings seemed to dance to the music they conceived, but far from that were the relations between the family members. Now let's move to people of other professions.<sup>10,11</sup>

## Writers

### Three Dumas

Although a very successful person for a period in his life, **General**

**Thomas-Alexandre Dumas Davy de la Pailleterie** (1762-1806), would have been lost in history, unless he had a son and a grandson who became classics of French literature. Thomas-Alexandre was a son of a French aristocrat and a black slave from Saint-Domingue (now Haiti). At the age of 14 his father took him to France where his career developed at lightning speed. There was no slavery in continental France, which made him a free man. He was a good-looking man, exotic, as he was very strong, tall and had brown skin, thick lips and curly hair, which reminded of his African ancestry. Starting, with the help of his father, the career as a private at the age of 24, by 31 he was already a General-in-Chief. In the military he was known just as Thomas-Alexandre Dumas. He was the only man of African ancestry not only in France, but also in whole Europe, who made such an outstanding career. Initially, he and Napoleon were close to each other, but then Napoleon did not like to have a competitor, and Thomas-Alexandre was too independent and, as he said, loved revolution more than he loved Napoleon, so eventually, his military career failed, he fell ill and couldn't even get a pension from Napoleon, so his wife and children, including the future great French writer, were financially supported by his parents-in-law.

Thomas-Alexandre married Marie-Louise Élisabeth Labouret, the daughter of an inn-keeper. They had two daughters and a son, to become the great writer Alexandre Dumas-père (the father) (1802-1870). Thomas-Alexandre was very attached to his son. The boy had blue eyes and white skin and only curly hair was a hint at his African descent. The boy, too, adored his kind-hearted father. The son admired his father's strength which he maintained even when he was ill. Like many boys, he was attracted by his father's beautiful embroidered with gold military uniform and arms. Unfortunately, the boy was only 4 when his father died. Allegedly, he took one of his father's rifles, and told his mother he was going to shoot god, as he took his father from him. After his father died (and the country was again ruled by the king Louis XVIII), his mother wanted Alexander to have his aristocratic name Davy de la Pailleterie back, but he refused, saying arrogantly that his name was Dumas and that his father wouldn't have been glad in the other world if he would carry his grandfather's name and not his.

Alexandre Dumas (whom we know as Alexandre Dumas-père) remembered little of his father, however, he inherited his physical power, generosity, imagination, and ambition. He was brought up on the ideas of the Great French Revolution – equality, fraternity, and liberty, and the stories of adventures and battles, largely due to the spirit of his father present in their home. We can recognize his father in, on the one hand, brave, even reckless, amorous and faithful D'Artagnan, and, on the other hand, in kind-hearted gourmand Portos (who also resembles the writer himself). So, Napoleon who ordered that even the name of Thomas-Alexandre Dumas is never mentioned in the future, managed to get rid of the name, but not of the personality of his former friend.

Alexandre went to conquer Paris as a playwright, and became a popular one, however, today we mostly know him as a novelist. However, to make both ends meet, he worked as a scribe, as he had very beautiful handwriting. Due to his noble ancestry, he got a post in Duke D'Orléans household (later the Duke became king Louis-Philippe), however, his heart was in the theater. He often attended performances, had love affairs with actresses, befriended stage managers and actors and tried his hand at writing plays. It wasn't easy, but eventually he achieved that some of his plays ran with great success. He didn't want to tie himself with bonds of



marriage. However, when he heard that Marie-Laure-Catherine Labay, a dressmaker he lived with, was going to give birth to a baby, he (after some time) legally recognized the boy as his son. For marriage he would prefer a rich and noble beauty, aristocrat or renowned actress. After some time they separated, but he did care a lot for his son. He paid for the best possible education for his son he himself was mostly self-educated, while his son studied at the renowned at the time Institution Goubaux and the Collège Bournon. Each time when **Alexandre Dumas-fils** (the son) (1824-1885) got ill, his mother would rush to his father for doctors and money. For instance, Dumas-the-son once refused to have leeches put for treatment. His father said it wouldn't be painful, but the boy demanded the proof – that the father was treated with leeches. And the father obediently did, in order that his son agreed to be treated.

It so happened that Dumas-the son's mother was not too educated or clever. When the boy was born, he was registered as 'illegitimate', and nobody recommended her to add "but recognized." This is why when Dumas-père finally officially recognized his son, he was the first to legalize the boy, so when his mother went to court to keep the boy with her, this right was denied to her. Dumas-fils stayed with his father and step-mother. The boy suffered a lot due to the war between his parents. He wanted to love and respect both, but eventually he took his mother's side, as he saw she was faithful to him and his father changed women like gloves. Dumas-père was an egoistic man who wanted to enjoy life, but at the same time he was a kind-natured man and supported both financially and morally his lovers after he abandoned them, as he sincerely wanted them to be as happy as he was. But he couldn't imagine himself tied to one skirt, even when married.

Although Dumas-père was a kind man, he was quite hot-tempered. For example, Alexandre (the son) remembered that once his father was angry of the boy's noisy behavior while he was working, and threw him on the bed with all his force. Next day, as a pardon to his son he brought a melon (which was very expensive and difficult to get in those days). And he quite often brought melons home.

Dumas-fils suffered from the conflict between his parents. The boy was often sent to a boarding school due to the endless war between them. Therefore, whatever the father did to gain his son's love was in vain. The boy loved tenderly his hardworking, honest, simple-minded and loyal mother. He loved his father, in a way, too. Not without his influence the son also became a prolific writer, not so renowned, but quite recognized. While his father's books ("Three Musketeers," "Count of Monte-Cristo" and others) were about adventures, his books (first of all, "The Lady of the Camellias") were sentimental and sad – about rivalry between father and son, father's strange way to care for his son (but in reality for himself), and poor woman's hard life. At the age of 42 he admitted to his friend that he never managed to pardon his father. However, he maintained a solid relationship with his father his entire life. The great schooling his father ensured him also worked – his writing was of high quality. In 1874, he was admitted to the Academie Francaise and in 1894 he was awarded the order of Légion d'Honneur.

Both the son and the grandson of Thomas-Alexandre Dumas Davy de la Pailleterie inherited from him strong, passionate and struggling characters. Dumas-père had to struggle against racial prejudices, while Dumas-fils suffered from his illegitimate status. Both had to prove to the society and themselves that they were not

worse, but even better than others. Dumas-père had such a rich fantasy that people called him a liar and a braggart. Father's and grandfather's life served a constant lesson to both. But the lesson they got was different. Dumas-père was a spendthrift, while his son was thrifty. The father was frivolous, while the son was very reasonable.<sup>12-15</sup>

## Politicians

Considering politicians and their fathers, it is impossible to exclude five generations of Nehru-Gandhi family. Jawaharlal Nehru (1889-1964) was the first Prime Minister of India during 1947-1964. He was also one of the leaders of Indian movement for independence in the 1930-40s. He came from a very educated family of Kashmiri Brahmins. His father, Motilal Nehru,<sup>16</sup> was an outstanding lawyer who actively participated in independence movement. He was also the President of the Indian National Congress during 1919-1920 and in 1928.

According to Menon (2013),<sup>17</sup> Motilal Nehru was a very respected and strict man. When he was working at home in his study, nobody dared come in. And, of course, nobody could take his belongings without permission. Once, little Jawaharlal took his father's pen and didn't tell anybody. When it was discovered, he was punished. The two lessons he learned from it were: never deceive people and never disobey father. His childish feelings to his father were both respect and some fear. However, he only was educated to be a lawyer like his father, but was not interested in the job. So, probably, he did disobey his father. Anyway, when a young man, he more freely discussed various things with his father, for example, his problem of losing hair, which he was very much preoccupied with (The Indian Express, 2016).<sup>18</sup> Jawaharlal Nehru cared about his appearance, not only about politics.

Motilal Nehru believed in equal opportunities for men and women, that is why Jawaharlal Nehru's sister, Vijaya Lakshmi Pandit,<sup>19</sup> received a very good education. However, her parents, according to Indian tradition, chose her a husband. Luckily, the choice was good, which indicates that he parents really cared about her happiness and not about some benefits from the marriage, as it often happens in arranged marriages. Husband and wife really shared the same views and interests. They were both actively involved in politics. This enabled Vijaya to become the first woman president of the United Nations General Assembly. She had a successful career of a diplomat and later, in India, she served as Governor of Maharashtra from 1962 to 1964, after which she was elected to the Indian parliament's lower house, Lok Sabha, from Phulpur by Mishra. For her, non-violent teachings were as important as for her father and brother. This later became the reason of her conflict with her niece, Indira Gandhi, who was a less peaceful ruler than her grandfather and father would like her to be.

Jawaharlal Nehru's daughter, Indira Priyadarshini (1917-1984), known by her married name as Indira Gandhi, became the third Indian Prime Minister, and her son, Rajiv Gandhi, became Indian Prime Minister after her. Both children of Rajiv Gandhi and Sonia Gandhi (nee Maino), son Rahul and daughter Priyanka, have been involved in politics, but have not occupied very high posts yet.

Nehru was very close to his daughter and often wrote to her, when they were not together. In his letters he desired both to educate her and to give her political advice for the future. He wrote 30 letters to her while she was in a boarding school in Mussoorie, which were first published as a book in 1929. In Letters from

a Father to His Daughter written to 10-year-old Indira he wrote about nature, history, languages, civilization, religion, voyages, trade, and society. He did his best to make the sophisticated issues clear for a little girl, however, his explanations are not like fairy tales, they are quite scientific. He tried to connect all explanations with real-life examples and provide pictures where possible. In the introduction to the book, Indira Gandhi wrote:

Most children idolise their parents, but not all parents are as good companions as mine were. My father was interested in everything and delighted in sharing his enthusiasm. I was full of questions and this enabled him to tell me about the world, and the men and women who inhabited it and who have moved others by their ideas and actions, and through literature and art. Above all he loved to speak and write about our wonderful country, its early achievements and grandeur and the later decline and bondage. One thought was uppermost in his mind and that was freedom - freedom not only for India but for all peoples of the world.<sup>20</sup>

Nehru's writing is also full of humour: Man "imagines himself so utterly different from the animals. But it is good to remember that we are cousins of the ape and the monkey, and even now many of us, I am afraid, behave like the monkeys do!"<sup>20</sup>

He gave wise advice to his daughter, probably already so early believing she would become a politician in the future: As Indians we have to live in India and work for India. But we must not forget that we belong to the larger family of the world and the people living in other countries are after all our cousins. It would be such an excellent thing if all the people in the world were happy and contented. We have therefore to try to make the whole world a happier place to live in.<sup>20</sup>

At least, he believed that "to work together is better than to work singly, and to work together for the common good is the best of all".<sup>20</sup> And later they did work together a lot. After India gained independence, Nehru's daughter moved to his official residences and was deeply involved in her father's work. She accompanied him on his trips across India and other countries. In 1959 she was elected congress party president, which caused criticism – Nehru was blamed of nepotism, while in reality he was against this election and 'dynasticism'. He also did not expect his daughter to be so ruthless while deciding some political issues either, as he taught her to be patient and peaceful.<sup>21</sup>

Jawaharlal Nehru also wrote *Glimpses of World History* while he was in prison, also addressed to his daughter. However, the letters could not be sent to her until he was released in 1933. Frank<sup>21</sup> tells her readers that Indira was most of the time separated from her parents, however, very attached to her father. Frank cites the outstanding English writer, Iris Murdoch, who used to be Indira Gandhi's classmate, that Indira was "very unhappy, very lonely, intensely worried about her father and her country and thoroughly uncertain about the future." The girl was not planning to become a politician, only after her husband and her father died, she chose to become a politician. In turn, Indira Gandhi, was very close with her son, but this is another, mother-and-son, story.

For those who think that to have a father is more important for sons than for daughters, the names of two outstanding women – Indira Gandhi and Benazir Bhutto (1953-2007) support the opposite view. Benazir's father, Zulfikar Ali Bhutto (1928-1979), was an outstanding Pakistani politician, President during 1971-1973 and Prime Minister during 1973-1977, overthrown and executed by the military.

Her father often told Benazir stories about generations of their family. Her grandfather, for instance, sent his daughters to school, which was considered scandalous by other landowners. He sent her father to study abroad. Benazir was the eldest child of four. Her skin in childhood was so rosy that she was nicknamed Pinkie. When her parents left on political errands, Pinkie was responsible for her siblings. It happened for the first time when she was eight (of course, there were other family members and servants to look after them, but parents told her she was responsible).

Zulfikar Ali Bhutto cared most about his children's education and did everything that they received the best, both home and formal, education. In her *Daughter of Destiny* she recalls that, when she became of age, she wore a burka (a long loose Muslim women's dress covering the whole body from head to feet) for the first time. She did not like the experience, so her father said she didn't have to, and she became the first woman in Bhutto family who was released from wearing it.

As cited in Hughes and Shaffer,<sup>22</sup> Benazir Bhutto claimed: "My father always would say: my daughter will go into politics, my daughter will become prime minister, but it's not what I wanted to do. I would say, No, Papa, I will never go into politics. [...] As children we had been taught that no price was too high pleaded, but the personal price to our family had been high. I pledged, I begged with them to let me embrace my beautiful father for the last time. They refused. We parted without being able to touch". In her *Daughter of Destiny* Benazir Bhutto wrote that the authorities arranged her and her mother's half-an-hour meeting with her father, only gave her father's personal things to her after the execution and burial. She kept sleeping with her father's shirt under her pillow, to feel that her father was still near her.

Benazir's father legislated maternity leave for working women in Pakistan. He addressed poor people as equals, and so did she. They didn't (or couldn't) do too much for poor people, however, there still are legends in the country about them, as they were the only rulers who at least spoke to poor people. As Zulfikar Ali Bhutto believed in the equality of women and men, Benazir received her bachelor degree at Harvard University (Radcliff College) in Government. Between 1973 and 1977 Bhutto attended Oxford University in Oxford, UK. In 1976 she was elected president of Oxford Union, becoming the first Asian woman to head that famous debating society.

After her father's execution in 1979 Benazir Bhutto headed Pakistan People's Party, earlier headed by her father, and was twice elected the Prime Minister of the country – in 1988 and 1993. Although the fact that she was her father's political heiress mattered a lot for her achievements, the fact that she became the first woman in a Muslim nation to become a Prime Minister, was not an automatic result of her origins. She was courageous, well-educated, her mentality was weighted East-West one, and she was a skilled politician. Paradoxically for an oriental country, it was her and not her brother Murtaza Bhutto (1954–1996, Mir Ghulam Murtaza Bhutto, a Pakistani politician and leader of al-Zulfikar, a Pakistani left-wing militant organization) who continued her father's political path.<sup>23–26</sup>

## Artistic professions

Nicholas (Nikolai) Roerich (1874–1947) was a Russian lawyer, painter, writer, archaeologist, theosophist, philosopher, and public figure. Born in Saint Petersburg in a family of a well-off notary

Baltic German father and to a Russian mother, Roerich lived in various places in the world until his death in Naggar, Himachal Pradesh, India. He was actively involved in preserving art and architecture during times of war. He was nominated several times to the longlist for the Nobel Peace Prize.

Nicholas had a relaxed childhood in his lawyer-father's home, surrounded by historians, orientalisks, archeologists and other representatives of intelligentsia. The boy was very talented in music, theatre, writing, and painting. Roerich studied simultaneously at St. Petersburg University and the Imperial Academy of Arts, as his father believed that painting was not a decent occupation, so he obtained the title of "artist" in 1897 and a degree in law in the same year. He worked for the Imperial Society for the Encouragement of the Arts, whose school he directed from 1906 to 1917. He believed that all visual arts, from painting to theatre, should be taught together, which was a revolutionary approach then. During 1910-1916 he became the president of Sergei Diaghilev's "World of Art" society.

Nicholas married in 1901. His wife Helena completely shared her husband's interests and accompanied him everywhere. She learned photography to take pictures of his expeditions. She photographed many monuments that later would be destroyed during and after the Russian revolution, so many monuments remained only in her photos. In 1916 he, his wife Helena, and their two sons George and Svetoslav (Svyatoslav) went to live in Finland for health reasons, but in 1918 it so happened that Finland was cut off Russia, so he occurred in expat's position. In 1919 they moved to London, and in 1920 he had a tour in the USA. In 1923 Roerich, went to the Himalayas with his wife and his son Yuri (George), while in 1924 the family returned to the West. Roerich took his sons to his expeditions, they were brought up to be hardworking, to love nature, to be observant, and active. They attended the same gymnasium as their father. Yuri Roerich was involved in Egyptian studies, was very good at languages which he studied in Harvard and the Sorbonne. The family founded an institute for scientific research in the Himalayas, which was headed by Yuri, the elder son on Roerich. He was responsible for linguistic and archeological studies, while his father dealt with plants and pharmacopeia.

On his way to America, Nicholas Roerich stopped at the Soviet embassy in Berlin, where he told the local plenipotentiary about a Central Asian expedition he wanted to take, and asked for Soviet protection on his way. Although Roerich did not support the Russian revolution, based on his report, Chicherin, the minister of foreign affairs, his former university mate, mentioned that he had "absolutely pro-Soviet leanings, which looked somewhat Buddhic-Communitic". Formally, the goal of the expedition was to collect seeds of plants which prevented soil erosion. Roerich was in India during World War II, where he painted Russian epic heroic and saintly themes, including, for example, Alexander Nevsky (the Russian prince famous for his military victories over German and especially Swedish invaders). In 1942, the American-Russian cultural Association (ARCA) was created in New York whose active participants were Nicholas Roerich, Ernest Hemingway, Rockwell Kent, and Charlie Chaplin.

Roerich's art is a unity of all visual arts, as well as the unity of the East and the West. Nowadays, the Nicholas Roerich Museum in New York City is a major institution for Roerich's artistic work. Numerous Roerich societies continue to promote his theosophical teachings worldwide. His paintings can be seen in

several museums including the Roerich Department of the State Museum of Oriental Arts in Moscow; the Roerich Museum at the International Centre of the Roerichs in Moscow; the Russian State Museum in Saint Petersburg, Russia, the Tretyakov Gallery in Moscow, and in various art museums in India.

Svetoslav Nikolaevich Roerich (1904–1993), Russian and Indian painter, son of Helena and Nicholas Roerich, was taught painting by his father from a young age. He studied architecture in England in 1919 and entered Columbia University's school of architecture in 1920. At the age of 19, he already headed the cultural center opened by his father in the USA. He won the Grand Prix of the Sesquicentennial Exposition in Philadelphia in 1926. During the expedition to India, however tired he might have been, he ever day did some painting. In the research institute founded by his father, he was occupied by breeding drought-resistant cereals.

In India Jawaharlal Nehru awarded him the International Award and the Padma Bhushan, third highest public award in India. His paintings of Nehru and Indira Gandhi, adorn the historic Central Parliament Hall in New Delhi.

Svetoslav shared and supported his father's enterprises, for instance, during the expedition in Asia he helped him collect medical herbs, study botany, Tibetan and Chinese pharmacopeia. The father and the son contributed a lot to the development of both Russian-Indian cultural relations and painting dedicated to India. While the father was concentrated on mystic Indian landscapes the son was in love with the beauty of the country (he was married to the beauty queen of the silver screen Devika Rani). The great Indian writer Rabindranath Tagore, who was among the friends of the family, mentioned that the senior Roerich's paintings of the Himalayas reproduces the spirit of those mountains, not just their looks.<sup>27–30</sup>

The legendary American actor, producer, director, screenwriter and philanthropist Kirk Douglas (1916-2020) lived a long life of 103 years, a life which was full of both difficulties and triumphs. He was born Issur Danielovitch in Amsterdam, N.Y. in 1916 in an immigrant Jewish family (in Mogilev, Russian Empire, now Belarus). They adopted Demsky surname upon their emigration to the US. His father used to be a ragman. Kirk's childhood was hard, as his father was drinking heavily and abusing his family. Kirk said he would never behave like this to his children. However, there was something he admired in his father and learned from him: while spending time with his friends in a saloon, his father told exciting stories, and he was an artistic story-teller, a real showman.

From his first marriage Kirk Douglas had two sons – actor Michael Douglas and producer Joel Douglas. After Kirk divorced his first wife Diana Douglas (nee Dill), he did his best to maintain his relationships with both sons. He advised them on their life and career even when they were already in their 40s. "Stamina and tenacity" were the main things he taught them, as Michael Douglas later mentioned. In 2018, when Michael received his star of fame, which was a few feet from his father's star received by the latter in the 1960s, the whole family, Michael's wife Kathrin Beta Jones, his son Cameron and, of course, his father, attended the ceremony.

The movie *It Runs in the Family*<sup>31</sup> also reflects the creative unity of the family - the Douglasses played three generations of a Jewish family. The father of the family, Mitchell Gromberg, starred by Kirk Douglas, is sarcastic and dominating (does he remind us



of Kirk's father or Kirk himself?), he cannot build relationships with his son Alex, performed by Michael Douglas, who is too permissive to his son Asher, played by Cameron Douglas, as result the 21-year-old son deals with marijuana (does he remind us of Eric?). Even the mother's role is performed by Diana Douglas, Kirk's ex-wife (as his wife Anna was not an actress). The youngest son, El Gromberg, is having the difficult teenage problems. Michael Douglas, besides starring in the film, was also the producer of the movie, while Fred Schepisi was the director and Jesse Wigutow the scriptwriter. We do not know whether it was the Douglasses' wish to make the movie partially biographic or not, however, the fact that all the Grombergs are in the same business – law company – makes us think that probably yes. At least the idea that family relations are not always simple and sweet is definitely tied to the stars' lives.

Kirk wanted to be an actor since his kindergarten years, but he had to take 40 various simple jobs before he really became an actor. It was his classmate Betty Joan Perske (later known as Lauren Bacall), who helped him to get into profession. He played in more than 80 films. Among his best-known movies are *Champion*, *The Bad and the Beautiful*, *Lust for Life*, *Paths of Glory*, and *Spartacus*. He always played brave, strong, and harsh men. When his father died, Michael wrote about him: "To the world he was a legend, an actor from the golden age of movies who lived well into his golden years, a humanitarian whose commitment to justice and the causes he believed in set a standard for all of us to aspire to. But to me and my brothers Joel and Peter he was simply Dad, to Catherine (Michael Douglas' wife Catherine Zeta-Jones) a wonderful father-in-law, to his grandchildren and great grandchild their loving grandfather, and to his wife Anne, a wonderful husband."<sup>32</sup> "Let me end with the words I told him on his last birthday and which will always remain true. Dad – I love you so much and I am so proud to be your son."<sup>32</sup>

Kirk Douglas was a Judaist. Although his children had non-Jewish mothers, Douglas stated that they were "aware culturally" of his "deep convictions" and he never tried to influence their own religious decisions.

In Paris he met Anne Buydens (nee Hannelore Marx, from Germany). They lived more than 60 years together. They had two sons, Peter, a producer, and Eric, an actor. Eric, unfortunately, died of drug overdose at the age of 46.

Michael Douglas (born 1944) received much of his filmmaking knowledge by accompanying his father during shooting. However, he did receive a formal education in that direction, too – a BA at University of California (Santa Barbara). As a producer he became both nationally and internationally famous by *One Flew over the Cuckoo's Nest* (1975). It's interesting that his father was excited by the book by Ken Kesey in the 1960s, bought the rights to make the movie, but failed to find a producer. Eventually, he sold the rights to his son Michael who made it the second film in Hollywood history to take all five major prizes: for best picture, best actor (Jack Nicholson), best actress (Louise Fletcher) best director (Miloš Forman), and best screenplay. He starred in *Romancing the Stone* (1984) and its sequel, *The Jewel of the Nile* (1985), *Fatal Attraction*, and *Wall Street*. Joel Douglas (born 1947) was also a production manager of *One Flew over the Cuckoo's Nest*, *Romancing the Stone* and *The Jewel of the Nile*. Peter Douglas (born 1955) worked closely with his father and became president of the Bryna Company, an independent film and television production company formed by Kirk Douglas in 1949.

In 1978, he formed his own film production company, Vincent Pictures. Peter's middle name was Vincent, so the company was named after Vincent van Gogh whose role Kirk Douglas played earlier. Peter studied photography at Los Angeles Art Center. Besides producing movies, he has been a popular photographer. Although none of the sons of the great father overdid him, they followed his path, while Michael's achievement on that way was very impressive.<sup>33–39</sup>

Stalin's times most successful Soviet Russian poet and playwright Sergei Mikhalkov (1913–2009) started a very successful dynasty: his sons Andrei Konchalovsky (born 1937), a theatre and film director, and Nikita Mikhalkov (born 1945), actor and film director, head of the Russian Cinematographers' Union, grandson Egor Konchalovsky (born 1966), film director, screen writer and producer, and granddaughters, actresses Anna Mikhalkova (born 1974) and Nadezhda Mikhalkova (born 1986).

Sergei Mikhalkov was born in an aristocratic Moscow family (which he did not mention much in the Soviet time), his father, Vladimir, decided not to emigrate after the 1917 revolution, due to the love of his native country. To avoid being persecuted for his aristocratic origins, he moved to Pyatigorsk (in the south of Russia) and to dedicate himself to the study of aviculture (poultry-growing). It was his father who introduced to him Mayakovsky's and Esenin's poetry. Sergei wrote verses from the age of 9 and recited them in front of his family. His father silently, without informing anybody, sent them to a poet he knew personally, and the latter recommended the boy to continue writing poems. So Sergei was sent to Moscow – to learn literature and to try his hand at it. A year after his father's death, in 1933, Sergei's verses appear in the popular journal *Ogoniok* (Fire) and newspaper *Izvestia* (News).

Sergei, besides having a poetic talent, knew how to serve the people in power. He wrote three versions of Russian (first two – Soviet) anthem – in 1944, 1977 and 2000, which automatically put him on top of elite during Stalin's Brezhnev's and Putin's rule, whatever the quality of his poetry. He wrote a poem called *Svetlana* – the name of Stalin's daughter. A line in 1944 anthem mentioned Stalin "who brought us up". Sergei changed a few lines upon Stalin's personal recommendation. During the Great Patriotic war Sergei served as a war correspondent. In 1958 he participated in the campaign against the great Russian poet Boris Pasternak, later in the campaign against the great Russian thinker and writer Alexander Solzhenitsyn. His satirical newsreel *Fitil* (The Fuse) and fables criticized Soviet bureaucracy, without touching the top of the mountain. The plays he wrote for children, including, probably, his own grandchildren (e.g., *Feast of Disobedience*, 1983), were not only entertaining, but also didactic. Sergei Mikhalkov even became a Member of the Academy of Pedagogical Sciences of the USSR (now - Russia Academy of Education). Although also quite didactic, his children's verses about the tall and kind militiaman Uncle Styopa were simple and funny, so practically all Soviet children knew them by heart. Obviously, for the anthem he received three Stalin prizes, the order of Lenin, and the order of St. Andrew – the highest awards in the USSR and then Russia.<sup>40,41</sup>

The elder son of Sergei Mikhakov, Andrei Konchalovsky (the working name he took from his mother, also a poet) in 1960 co-wrote with the genius film director Andrei Tarkovsky the script of Andrei Rublev, telling the story of the 15th-century great Russian painter of religious icons. The movie was not very much



in the Soviet traditions, and ended up on the shelf. However, Konchalovsky and Tarkovsky were perceived as heroes and dissidents by Soviet intelligentsia. Then he made more classical films such as *Uncle Vanya* (1970) according to Chekhov's play and *A Nest of Gentle Folk* (1969) according to Turgenev's novel, to soften the hearts of cinematographic powers. From time to time he, however, made 'strange' films like *The Story of Asya Klyachina Who Loved a Man but Did Not Marry Him* (1967). His epic *Siberiade* upon its 1979 release was favourably received at Cannes and made it possible for him to move to the United States in 1980.

His most popular Hollywood movies include *Maria's Lovers* (1984), *Runaway Train* (1985), *Tango & Cash* (1989), *The Odyssey* (1997) and *The Lion in Winter* (2003). Both in his Hollywood movies and the Russian-made ones, Andrei Konchalovsky is very critical. For example, in *Asya Klyachina* there are references to the Vietnam War. In one episode, a former Gulag prisoner talks about his homecoming, but the movie was not overtly 'political' (however, a very unusual one for a film dedicated to farm life in the USSR). On the other hand, in his more recently made in Hollywood movie *Dear Comrades!* (2020) he overtly criticizes the Soviet regime, telling the real-life story set in the Russian city of Novochoerkassk in 1962, when a peaceful protesting demonstration was dispersed by gunfire.<sup>42,43</sup>

His successful cinematographic career (irrespective the obvious talent) was ascribed by many to his father. Although in obvious opposition to the Soviet state, he was never really punished, and many people also believe that was due to his powerful father. In an interview mentioned in *The Independent* he says: "You know, whatever I achieved in my life, it was always interpreted that my father helped me. It was an easy way to explain everything I did."<sup>44</sup>

His world view is the opposite of that of his equally nationally and internationally celebrated brother, **Nikita Mikhalkov**, a three-time laureate of the State Prize of the Russian Federation (1993, 1995, 1999) and is a Full Cavalier of the Order "For Merit to the Fatherland", also winner of Oscar Prize for the Best Foreign Language Film and the Grand Prix of the Cannes Film Festival (1994) for the film *Burnt by the Sun*. Nikita, according to his brother Andrei Konchalovsky, is nationalistic and conservative.

Nikita Mikhalkov studied acting at the children's studio of the Moscow Art Theatre and later at the Shchukin School of the Vakhtangov Theatre. He played in Georgiy Daneliya's film *Walking the Streets of Moscow* (1964) and his brother Andrei Konchalovsky's film *Home of the Gentry* (1969) when he still was a student. He very soon became a star of the Soviet stage and cinema. He then was admitted to Institute of Cinematography to study film-making under his brother's teacher Mikhail Romm and Andrei Tarkovsky. Mikhalkov's first wife was renowned Russian actress Anastasiya Vertinskaya, from whom he had a son Stepan Mikhalkov. With his second wife, former model Tatyana, he had a son Artyom (born 1975), actor, screenwriter and film director, and daughters Anna (born 1974) and Nadezhda (born 1986), actresses. Andrei Konchalovsky's son Egor Konchalovsky is also a successful film director, screenwriter and producer. The whole family being doubtlessly talented, however, also benefitted from belonging to an elite family. For example, Egor Konchalovsky (born 1966) studied at the international school St Clare's at Oxford and at Kensington Business College. He holds an MA in Art History from the University of Cambridge. Egor Konchalovsky

worked as an assistant director in his father's film *Tango and Cash*. His family did much to him, but did not completely relieve him from hardships of life, for instance, he served in the army, and it did him good, as, according to him, it is hardships that make a personality. In an interview dedicated to his recent movie *On the Moon* he mentions that he, like the character of the movie, was 'a major' (a child from an elite family), he drove a car without a driving license just telling the policemen that he was Sergei Mikhalkov's grandson. In his family, he admits, a code of honour has been passed from generation to generation. His father and him grew in the same system, they were friends, as well as with his grandfather. However, with today's generation it's more difficult to be friends, he says.<sup>45</sup>

**Māris Rūdolfs Liepa** (1936-1989) was a Soviet Latvian ballet dancer. Born in Riga, he graduated from Riga Choreography School. He also studied in Moscow Choreographic School. He performed in Latvian National Opera, later at Moscow Stanislavsky and Nemirovich-Danchenko Academic Music Theatre, and eventually at Bolshoi Theatre. At the height of career, Liepa was considered one of the finest male dancers in the world and one of the most versatile. His performances in *Le Corsaire*, *The Swan Lake*, *La Bayadere* and *Spartacus* were particularly celebrated, and in 1970 he was awarded the Lenin Prize for the role of Crassus in *Spartacus*. The Paris Ballet Academy honoured him with both the Marius Petipa and the Nijinski Awards and in 1971 named him Dancer of the Year.

His father, Edward Liepa, was an opera singer but had lost his voice at an early age and became a stage engineer at the Latvian National Opera. Edward Liepa had many theatrical friends who suggested dancing would help strengthen his son's health.

At the age of 19 Māris Liepa was noticed by one of the Bolshoi's prima ballerinas, Maya Plisetskaya. She invited Liepa to join her ballet company on a tour in Budapest in 1956. He accepted the invitation, and after four seasons he became one of the lead artists. Liepa's debut on the stage of the Moscow State Academic Bolshoi Theatre saw him perform Basil in *Don Quixote*, with Maya Plisetskaya in the early 1960s, and shortly after he played the most crucial role of his career – Count Albert in staging of *Giselle*. Collaboration with Ballet Master of the State Academic Bolshoi Theatre Yuri Grigorovich began in 1964. In 1966 Liepa had his first performance in re-staged Fokin's *Spirit of the Rose*, in 1968 he played a part in the new version of *Spartacus*. Every time he danced, Liepa would give all he had, mercilessly burning himself out. Liepa danced his last large role with the theater in 1977, in a staging of *Chipollino*. After leaving, he staged and organized several of his own creative performances and actively cooperated with the new ballet troupe of Boris Eifman. He worked as a ballet teacher and became the Artistic Director of Sofia National Opera between 1983 and 1985. In 1989 Liepa was working on creating his own ballet theatre in Moscow, however, sudden death did not let him realize his plans.

He performed on stages of Europe and USA. Liepa played roles in movies and TV, in *Hamlet* and *Spartacus*. A book, *I Want to Dance for Hundred Years*, written by Māris Liepa, was published in Riga in 1981. Latvian National Opera hosts the annual Māris Liepa memorial concerts that are organized by his children - son Andris and daughters Ilze (ballet dancer) and Maria (actress and singer). According to Maris Liepa Charitable Foundation (2021a), "in some ways, he has achieved a kind of immortality: in films and in books, in memoirs, in photographs, paintings and sculpture, in

his pupils and in the hearts of his fans. Above all, he lives on in his children, Ilze and Andris Liepa, in the work of the Maris Liepa Foundation which they set up, and in the gala-concerts in Riga, Moscow, Saint-Petersburg, Paris, and London.”

While the film *Ilze* was shot, he met actress Margaret Zhigunova. To this (second of his four marriages) marriage were born two children – son Andris and daughter Ilze. The children's names were given in honor of the characters in the movie. Both the son and the daughter followed their father's footsteps and became dancers. Maris was a caring, but also demanding father. He described in his book how once Ilze was watching a movie on TV while sitting on a split, to achieve better eversion, in order to distract her from the pain. He told her to pull her toes, and she looked up at him with mute pain. In the Bolshoi theatre they were, in fact, blackmailing Marius, in order for Ilze to maintain her place in the cast, however, they gave her unimportant comic roles only.<sup>46,47</sup>

**Andris Liepa** (born 1962) graduated from Moscow Academy of Choreography in 1980. Upon graduation, Andris was invited to join the Bolshoi ballet. He was noticed and promoted by Rudolf Nureyev. There he starred in *Nutcracker*, *Sleeping Beauty*, *Giselle*, *Ivan the Terrible*, *the Golden Age*, *the Swan Lake*, and *Raymonda*. Although there have been people who said that gaining a name in ballet for Andris and Ilze was easy, due to their father's support, Andris said that they have always had to work very hard to prove that they were worthy to follow their father's path.

He was the first Soviet ballet dancer whom the government permitted to perform in a foreign cast. He performed in La Scala, Opera Garnier, Grand Opera Rome, and Swedish Opera. Together with his partner, Nina Ananiashvili, Andris was invited to join the New York City Ballet as guest star. They performed *Raymonda* variations, *Symphony in C* and *Apollo*. Among the prizes won by him is 1985 Grand Prix at the International Competition in Mississippi (USA). He successfully acted as a stage director, worked with the world ballet stars Baryshnikov and Bejart. As a choreographer, Andris has been restoring Diaghilev's Ballets Russes repertoire, among them *Scheherazade*, *The Firebird*, *Bolero*, *Polovtsian Dances*, *Le Spectre de la Rose*, *Petrushka*, *Chopiniana*, and *Le Coq D'Or*. His father, although divorced from his mother, cared much about him and his sister. Maris Liepa even quit from the Bolshoi, the stage of his life, not to create obstacles to his children's career there. However, Andris, after divorcing in 2012 his wife Ekaterina Liepa (nee Katkovskaya), also a ballet dancer, refuses to pay alimony to their daughter Xenia (except coving the expenditures for her education). The family used to be presented as ideal in public, and the divorce was very noisy, his wife blaming him of numerous things. Andris, on the other hand, claimed that the reason was the age difference between the spouses and the lifestyle that his wife wanted to keep. Anyway, there are fathers and fathers, and we are not to judge.<sup>48,49</sup>

**Ilze Liepa** (born 1963) graduated from the Moscow Academic School of Choreography in 1981. She performed in *Don Quixote*, *Raymond*, *Romeo and Juliet*, *Shekherazade*, etc. Ilze has taken part in various concert productions, performing both modern and classical turns. Working as the artistic director of the 'Golden Age' association since 1994, Ilze is also on the board of the Liepa Charity Foundation. In 2002 she received the rank of 'People's Artist of Russia'.<sup>50,51</sup>

Vincente Minnelli (born Lester Anthony Minnelli; 1903 –1986) was an outstanding American stage director and film director. He

directed the classic movie musicals *Meet Me in St. Louis* (1944), *An American in Paris* (1951), *The Band Wagon* (1953), and *Gigi* (1958). *An American in Paris* and *Gigi* both won Oscar prize for Best Picture. He also won Best Director prize for *Gigi*. Besides, Minnelli shot many comedies and melodramas. He was married to the famous actress Judy Garland from 1945 until 1951; the couple were the parents of Liza Minnelli (born 1946).

Singing and acting were inevitable with such parents. “In fact, a one-sentence report in *Variety* on May 7, 1947, reads, “Liza Minnelli, 14-month-old daughter of Judy Garland, makes her acting bow in Metro's *The Pirate*, which her father is directing.” The headline: “*In Ma's Footsteps*”.<sup>52</sup> However, aged 16 she moves from Hollywood to New York, to Broadway, trying to build her own success independently of her parents, she wins a Tony award in three years' time for *Cabaret* (1972).

Liza remembers her father, the director of MGM, as a “funny and wonderful man” and at the same time “an absolute czar who “ruled the MGM sets with a strong will and a gentle touch”.<sup>53</sup> And this little girl would ride with her father on a camera boom, sit in his office, and watch him shooting films. He might have screamed at other people, but not at his daughter. Once she said she wanted to be a matador, so her father ordered for her a cape and a jacket like toreadors have. When she likes some movie costume, he ordered miniature copies for her. “He stretched my imagination,”- she said (ibid). He took her with him wherever he went and told her exciting stories. He taught her how to dance, and she was fond of dancing. When Liza told her father she wanted to be a performer, he recommended her to be observant. Later, in her movies, he gave her valuable advice. In 1976 he made a movie with his daughter – *A Matter of Time*. The movie was set in Italy. Liza was a very obedient disciple for her father-director. She played a maid's role, and he wanted her, for instance, to lay the bed as well as a professional made would, and she did! In *Meet Me in St. Luis* he taught her – and the audience – to value family. “He brought simple, American, Midwestern values to a sophisticated and voluptuously told story” (ibid).<sup>53</sup>

Liza Minnelli is a famous American actress and singer perhaps best known for her role as Sally Bowles in Bob Fosse's classic musical film *Cabaret*. Initially she wanted to be an ice-skater or a dancer, but then in 1963 she won a supporting role in the off-Broadway (low-budget) revival of the 1941 musical *Best Foot Forward*. This brought her popularity and decided her career choice. In 1965 her performance in *Flora, the Red Menace* brought her a Tony award. So far she has been the youngest winner of the award. In 1973 she won both Oscar for best actress for her role in *Cabaret* and an Emmy Award for her performance as the star of the previous TV season's spectacular Liza with a “Z”. Martin Scorsese's *New York, New York* (1977) did not make money, but it gave Liza Minnelli her two ‘trademark’ songs – “*New York, New York*” and “*But the World Goes Round*.” The musical *The Act* brought her a third Tony award. Liza has recorded albums, played in movies and in Broadway shows a lot. As you can see, pampering children and following their desires is not always a bad thing.<sup>54</sup>

Isaak Osipovich Dunaevskiy (or Dunayevsky) (1900 – 1955) was a Soviet film composer and conductor of the 1930s and 1940s, who composed music for operetta and film comedies, frequently working with the film director Grigori Aleksandrov, e.g., he wrote music for *Jolly Fellows*., *Circus*, and *Volga-Volga*. Dunaevskiy was born to a Jewish family in Lkhvitsia, Poltava

Governorate, Russian Empire (now the Ukraine). He studied at the Kharkiv Musical School, and graduated from Kharkiv National Kotlyarevsky University of Arts. He was a violinist, then became an orchestra conductor. Dunaevskiy wrote 14 operettas, 3 ballets, 3 cantatas, 80 choruses, 80 songs and romances, music for 88 plays and 42 films, 43 compositions for light music orchestra and 12 for jazz orchestra, 17 melodeclamations, 52 compositions for symphony orchestra and 47 piano compositions and a string quartet. He was one of the first composers in the Soviet Union to start using jazz. He was twice – in 1941 and 1951 - awarded the Stalin Prize. He was known as the Red Mozart for his incredible talent and for his glorifying the achievements of the Soviet Union.<sup>55,56</sup>

Maksim Isaakovich Dunayevsky (born 1945) is a Soviet and Russian composer. People's Artist of Russia (2006). He has been the artistic director and chairman of the artistic council of the Moscow Regional Philharmonic since 2015. He is the son of Isaak Dunayevsky and the ballerina of the Alexandrov Ensemble and the Moscow Operetta Theater Zoya Ivanovna Pashkova (1922-1994), born out of wedlock. When Maksim was born, his father was officially married to another woman, so they could not be married. Maksim's elder brother on the father's side, Eugene (1932-2000) was an artist. Maksim received his father's surname only at the age of 16 when he received a passport. Before that, he bore his mother's surname Pashkov. When Maksim was 10 years old, his father died. The question arose about the inheritance. Thanks to the petition of famous composers and a special decision of the Soviet state, he was officially recognized as the legal heir, along with his mother, as well as the only official wife of Isaak Dunayevsky Zinaida Sudeikina and their eldest son Yevgeny.

In 1965 he graduated from the music school at the Moscow State Conservatoire, and in 1970 – from the Conservatoire. Alfred Schnittke was among his teachers. As he confesses, he didn't like to study much, and, seeing this, his father didn't insist. He preferred to improvise. Probably this is why he became a composer and not a performer. Only after his father died and silence established at home, he realized he wanted to be a musician and started to study seriously.

From 1969 to 1974, Dunayevsky was the conductor of the Vakhtangov Theater in Moscow. In 1974-1975, he was the chief conductor and music director of the Moscow music hall, in 1985-1987 he was the Artistic Director and Chief Conductor of the State Pop Orchestra of the Russian Federation. Although he wrote music for a symphony orchestra, theater, and stage, he is especially famous for his music for movies *D'Artagnan and Three Musketeers* (1979), *Carnival* (1981), and *Mary Poppins, Goodbye* (1984) – the latter is also his favourite work. Interestingly, in 1936, his father composed music for the film *Captain Grant's Children* (according to the famous science fiction novel by Jules Verne), while Maksim developed the famous motive in the series *In search of Captain Grant* (1986). He lived in the USA for almost eight years (1992-1999), worked in Hollywood, wrote music for several films. Since 2015, he has been the artistic director and chairman of the Artistic Council of the Moscow Regional Philharmonic. Like his father, Maksim is a great womanizer – he has been married 7 times. Among his wives is the famous actress Natalia Andrejchenko who starred in *Mary Poppins*. As you can see, children often inherit not only the abilities of their fathers, but also their character, although, of course, they do not repeat it exactly.<sup>57</sup>

Nobody would be surprised with a circus dynasty, but the Durovs are a special one. The brothers Vladimir (1863-1934) and Anatoly Durov (1864-1916), who became iconic figures of the Russian circus before and during the Soviet regime, originated one of Russia's most important circus dynasties. Surprisingly, they were born to a wealthy aristocratic family in Moscow. They were left orphans at a young age. Their godfather sent Vladimir and Anatoly to a military academy. There, the brothers much preferred circus acrobatics to academic studies and military exercises. In 1879, the brothers made their performing debut as acrobats in a balagan in Tver, a town north of Moscow. Later Vladimir became an animal trainer, while his brother was a clown performing with animals. Later both of them performed in humorous scenes with domestic animals. They were rivals on the arena. In 1884 their godfather offered them to complete education, and Vladimir accepted the offer. He graduated from a teacher's college, but then returned to circus. In 1919 he opened Durov corner which became a center of animal psychology study. After the 1917 revolution, his experiments were supported by Soviet officials as a new word in science.

In Durov's dynasty we can speak not simply of father's or mother's impact on the career choice, but the whole family's. The majority of the descendants of the brothers were inseparable of circus. Vladimir Vladimirovich Durov (1888-1912), **Natalia Vladimirovna Durova** (1889-1918), and **Yevgeny Vladimirovich Durov** (1893-1917), unfortunately, didn't live long, but their lives were tightly connected with circus. Natalia's son **Yuri Orlov-Durov** (1910-1971), though, continued the dynasty. Although his father was a count, after his mother's death, it was his grandfather, Vladimir Orlov, who adopted him and grew him up to be a man of circus. In turn, his daughter **Natalia Yurievna Durova** (1934-2007) made her debut in the ring at the age of 5, in 1939, in her father's animal act. In 1952-54, she worked as an animal trainer for the Central Circus Management (predecessor of SoyuzGosTsirk, the Soviet state circus organization), then, in 1956, she began to work at the Durov Animal Theatre. In 1978, she took over the Durov Animal Theatre, succeeding her aunt, Anna Durova (see below). In 1989, Natalia was made National Artist of the USSR. Yuri Yurievich Durov (born 1954) worked with his father before taking over his act upon Yury Vladimirovich's death in 1971. In 1993, Yuri Yurievich Durov was made National Artist of the Russian Federation. **Anna Vladimirovna Durova (Sadovskaya)** (1900-1978) was the daughter of Vladimir Durov and his third wife. She was an animal trainer who worked with her father at Durov Corner, in 1933 created the Moscow Animal Theater there. She was its Artistic Director until her death.

Maria Anatolievna Durova (1891-1970) made her circus debut at age 6, in 1887, in a musical act with her sister, Evlampiya (1888-1943). She later worked as her father's assistant in his mnemonic act, then as assistant to her brother Anatoly. Maria's daughter Tereza Durova (Milva) (1926-2012) started her career as an animal trainer at age 16, in 1942, and became famous as an elephant trainer—although she had also trained all sorts of exotic animals, from zebras to pelicans, in a series of spectacular mixed-animal acts. She was named National Artist of the Russian Soviet Federal Socialist Republic in 1980. Vladimir Durov (Schevchenko, 1909-1972) was the son of Evlampiya Anatolievna Durova. He studied at the Agricultural Academy, and then, probably responding to his Durov genes, studied drama at Meyerhold's Experimental Theater. In 1928, upon the accidental death of his surrogate father,



Anatoly Anatolievich Durov, Vladimir Grigorevich took over his act.

Judging by the fact that the Durovs' main approach to training was humane (they did not punish animals), one can assume how close, understanding and kind the relationship between fathers and children in this family was.<sup>58-60</sup>

## Guy and Emmanuelle Béart

Guy Béart (originally Guy Béhar-Hassan, 1930-2015) was a French songwriter and singer. He was born in Egypt, to Lebanese-Sephardic-Jewish parents. His father was an accountant and business consultant, so the family often went to France, Greece and Mexico. In Beirut he obtained a bachelor degree in mathematics, however, he became obsessed with music, so he went to Paris to study at a music school. To have a more practicable occupation in order to support his family after his father's death he studied in parallel to become an engineer. In the evenings, he sang in cabarets under the stage name Guy Béart. Initially he was shy and did not have ambitions to become famous, however, one lucky day a song of his was performed by a popular singer gained success. His songs are typical French *chansons* – melodic, tragic, sad, ironic, or/and romantic. The audience felt very cozy at his concert – as if talking in the kitchen to a close friend. His popularity did suffer from the popularity of rock music, but he maintained the traditional French style, which let him keep the fans of this style.<sup>61</sup>

Guy Béart's daughter from his second wife became a famous French actress – Emmanuelle Béart (born 1963). Emmanuelle is a film and television actress. Her large deep grayish-blue eyes that penetrate directly into your soul remind us so much of her father. "She fell into acting by accident, and continues to do it for love"<sup>62</sup> Her mother was Italian/Greek model Geneviève Galéa. Her parents separated when she was only nine months old. She grew in a farm near Saint-Tropez with her mother and siblings, as her father believed that the glamour world of Paris would not have a good impact on her.<sup>63</sup> She was kicked out of five schools for rebellious behaviour, and at the age of 15 left France for Canada. She spent a summer vacation with the English-speaking family of a close friend of her father there. After the vacation, they invited her to continue studies in Canada, which she did. At the age of 13 she got her first role in *Tomorrow's Children*. As a teenager, she often played little roles in television. Upon graduating from the *Collège International Marie de France* in Montreal, she returned to France to attend drama school in Paris. A short time later, she was cast in her first adult role in a film, and in 1986 she achieved fame with her role opposite the famous French actor Yves Montand, playing 'his' avenging daughter in French hit *Manon des Sources*. For her performance, she won the 1987 César Award for Best Supporting Actress. In the 1987 film *Date with an Angel*, she starred as the Angel. In 1995, she won the Silver St. George for Best Actress award at the 19th Moscow International Film Festival for her starring role in film *A French Woman*.<sup>64</sup>

Sexual and sensual, she has played both femmes fatales and women who are broken. She says: "I act these days because it keeps me awake and interested, an eternal student. I'm obsessive about learning all there is to know for whatever I'm doing. That's what makes you to advance and grow." In addition to her screen work, Béart is known for her social activism. She is an ambassador for UNICEF, and has made news for her opposition to France's anti-immigration legislation.

In 2020 an album was issued "De Béart à Béart" (from Béart to Béart) by Emmanuelle and her sister Eve to commemorate their father. Many famous French singers performed his song for the album. The daughters also made a documentary dedicated to him. In connection with this event, Emmanuelle spoke in an interview about him as a person: "He was uncompromising, quite authoritarian, transmitting particular things to us. It was important to him that a child knew how to be bored, so he would send us to our bedrooms".<sup>65</sup> She also described him as a musician: "My father was very modest, but in his songs we discover the perpetual lover he was, he expresses his anguish, his sadness, his anger and his hopes."<sup>65</sup>

In another interview she mentioned: "Before leaving, he told us: It is between me and God. What must remain will remain. He didn't care that his name was remembered. But we decided to betray his word with love".<sup>66</sup> How wonderful it is when you have such a relationship with your children that they want other people to keep memories of you, too.

## Sports

Very often sportsmen's and coaches' children are also in sports, however, not so often successful sportsmen father as successful children as themselves. Maybe they are too demanding to their own children, or maybe they dedicate too much time to other people's children or themselves. It's difficult to say why and it's different in each particular case. Anyway, I selected some father-son/daughter pairs for whom this is not true.

The great boxer and human Muhammad Ali (1942-2016) born Cassius Marcellus Clay Jr. was an American professional boxer, activist, entertainer, poet, and philanthropist. Cassius Clay was born and raised in Louisville, Kentucky. He began training as an amateur boxer at age 12. At 18, he won a gold medal in the light heavyweight division at the 1960 Summer Olympics and turned professional later that year. He converted into Muslim religion in 1961 and in 1964 announced that from then on his name would be Muhammad Ali. He won the world heavyweight championship in 1964, at the age of 22. In 1966, Ali refused to be drafted into the army in 1967, citing his religious beliefs and ethical opposition to the Vietnam War. He was found guilty of draft evasion so he faced 5 years in prison and was stripped of his boxing titles. He appealed and eventually, in 1971, won the case, however, he couldn't take part in competitions while his case was under discussion. He was a very high-profile figure of racial pride for African Americans during the civil rights movement of the 1960s-1970s. He was ranked the greatest heavyweight boxer of all time, and the greatest sportsman of the 20th century by *Sports Illustrated* and the Sports Personality of the Century by the BBC. In 1999, *Time* magazine named Ali one of the 100 Most Important People of the 20th Century.

Ali was married four times and had seven daughters and two sons. In his third marriage (to actress and model Veronica Porché) Ali had two daughters. Their second daughter, Laila Ali (born 1977) was a professional boxer from 1999 until 2007, although her father was against women being boxers. In 1978, Mohammad Ali said: "Women are not made to be hit in the breast, and face like that".<sup>67</sup> Laila became a boxer at the age of 18, after she heard about women's boxing. She wanted to be like her father. But the reason she decided to be a boxer dealt more with seeing that women can be real professionals in boxing. His daughter's desire to become a boxer made him unhappy, however, he attended



her debut and some other fights. Initially Mohammad Ali was not supportive, only after he saw that his daughter grew a real professional, he became her fan. "My father came to my dressing room and he gave me a hug and a kiss. I looked at him and he's like, 'Girl, you bad.' Meaning, you're good. He was kind of living through me a little bit as I danced around the ring like he used to." From that point on, Ali was deeply supportive of his daughter who has gone on to hold five different titles, including the IWBf light heavyweight title".<sup>68</sup> She learned a lot about box psychology from her father. During her career, from which she retired undefeated, she held the WBC, WIBA, IWBf and IBA female super middleweight titles, and the IWBf light heavyweight title. Laila Ali is widely regarded by many within the sport as one of the greatest female boxers of all time.<sup>69-71</sup>

Figure skating is often a family affair. For example, Takahiko Kozuka, born 1989, Japanese figure skater. He is the 2011 world silver medalist, a two-time Grand Prix Final medalist, a two-time Four Continents medalist, and the 2010-11 Japanese national champion – and his father Tsuguhiko Kozuka, born 1946, a figure skater who is now a coach and an international judge; he won the three-time Japan figure skating championships. Also Andrei Bukin, born 1957, a Soviet ice dancer, with his partner Natalia Bestemianova, he is the 1988 Olympic champion, 1984 Olympic silver medalist, four-time world champion, three-time world silver medalist, and five-time European champion, and his son Ivan Bukin, born 1993, is a Russian ice dancer. With his skating partner, Alexandra Stepanova, he is a four-time European medalist.<sup>72,73</sup>

However, the Sato family is special. Nobuo Sato (born 1942) won 10 Japanese championships and skated in two Olympics. His best result at the world championships was 4<sup>th</sup> place in 1965. He is one of the most successful coaches in Japan. His current and former students include Miki Ando, Mao Asada, Takahiko Kozuka, Yuka Sato (his daughter), Fumie Suguri, and Shizuka Arokawa, four of whom are world champions and all of them world medalists. He trains skaters together with his wife Kumiko Sato, nee Okawa who is ten years younger and used to be his student. Nobuo Sato was elected to the World Figure Skating Hall of Fame in 2010. He played a great role in the rise of Japanese figure skating. Today both father and daughter are Olympic coaches.<sup>72</sup>

Yuka Sato (born 1973) was 1993-94 Japan champion, and 1994 world champion. Her best Olympic result was fifth place in 1994. She was very artistic and welcome to figure skating shows, so, after winning the world gold medal, she turned professional, participating in and winning some professional world competitions. When her father was elected to the World Figure Skating Hall of Fame, Yuka was very excited and proud. She mentioned she learned to work hard from him, but also she learned a lot as a figure skater, a coach and just a person. When she performed in her first Olympics, she mentioned, it was so good to have him at her side. He taught her that to be a coach it is not enough to teach technical elements and to make up a good program, it is essential to have close relationships with students, to support them, to understand their problems, to calm them down, to let them believe in themselves. So far, Jeremy Abbott of the USA and Valentina Marchei of Italy are the best-known sportsmen Yuka has coached so far. She choreographed for Takahiko Kozuka. She has worked as a sports commentator for Japanese television as well.<sup>72,73</sup>

**The Tarasov family** is really outstanding. Although father and daughter represent different kinds of sports, they are united by

ice. **Anatoly Tarasov** (1918-1995), Russian ice hockey coach whose innovations in Soviet hockey established the country as the dominant force in international competition in the 1960s-1970s. Known as the 'father of Russian hockey', he guided the Soviet Union to 3 Olympic gold medals (1964, 1968, and 1972) and 10 world championships (1962-71). In the 1940 Canadians were beyond competition. Their style built of physical power could beat any team. Russian style was more intellectual. He managed to combine both features in his trainees and achieved fantastic success. He was the architect of the so-called Big Red Machine (the USSR ice hockey team), doing it with shocking methods, e.g., besides general athletic training, asking his players to take ballet lessons. If before, NHL (National Hockey League uniting the US and Canadian professional hockey clubs) was by itself, and world championships (for amateurs) by themselves, it was the so-called Summit Series of 1972 between the Soviet team and the Team Canada, represented by the best NHL players, initiated and prepared by Tarasov that the Soviets first met the Canadians and proved that they were more than comparable. And had the Soviet team been coached there by Tarasov instead of Vsevolod Bobrov, also a good, but at that moment a less experienced coach, who knows, what the result would have been (three games were won by the Soviet team, one game was a draught, while four games were won by the Canadians).<sup>74-78</sup>

Tatiana Anatolyevna Tarasova (born 1947), the daughter of Anatoly Tarasov, is a Russian figure skating coach and national figure skating team adviser. Tarasova has been coach to more world and Olympic champions than any other coach in skating history. Her students have won a total of eight Olympic gold medals in three of the four Olympic figure skating disciplines, in addition to 42 gold medals, 17 silver and 6 bronze medals at the European and World championships.

Her father introduced her to figure skating at the age of five. However, she went to figure skating classes by herself when she was 6, not accompanied by parents (they lived near the rink). It doesn't mean they didn't support her, it just meant she was a very independent girl, and this is what her father taught her. She grew a strong 'man' like her father, but she said her mother was also a strong 'man'. Her parents taught her not to lie. They loved each other a lot, and were all very close. Tarasova competed in pair skating with Aleksandr Tikhomirov and Georgi Proskurin. With Proskurin, she was a two-time Soviet national medalist. They finished 7<sup>th</sup> at the 1965 world championships and 4<sup>th</sup> at the 1966 European championships. At the age of 18, due to an injury, she quit from skating, but very soon her career as a coach began. She was very desperate when she couldn't continue as a sports person, but her father told her she could help others skate well, and she did. She studied at the Institute of Physical Culture. She watched her father as a coach, and learned much from him. He taught her to look at her sportsmen's feet, not their faces, and she has done so. She felt the same pain when they fell as they did. Her father also taught her that, whatever her age, her students should see her in skates on the ice. Like her father, she is a person obsessed by her profession.

Her most notable students have been Irina Rodnina / Alexander Zaitsev (won four World Championships 1975-1978 and two Olympic gold medals in 1976 and 1980 under her guidance), Marina Klimova / Sergey Ponomarenko, Ekaterina Gordeeva / Sergei Grinkov, Oksana Grishuk / Evgeni Platov (won 1997 World Championship and an Olympic gold medal in 1998 under

her), Natalia Bestemianova / Andrei Bukin (won four World Championships and the Olympic gold medal in 1988 under her), Ilia Kulik (won the Olympic gold medal in 1998 under her), Alexei Yagudin (three World Championships and an Olympic gold medal in 2002 under her), Mao Asada (won the 2010 World title and 2010 Olympic silver medal under her), Shizuka Arakawa (won the World Championships in 2004 and Olympic gold medal in 2006 under Tarasova and Nikolai Morozov), Shae-Lynn Bourne/ Victor Kraatz, Sasha Cohen, and Barbara Fusar-Poli / Maurizio Margaglio. She also choreographed multiple programs by Michelle Kwan, Brian Joubert, Evan Lysacek, and Johnny Weir. In 1993 Tatiana Tarasova and Elena Chaikovskaya created the All Stars ice theatre, an ice ballet. For 14 years, the Ice Theatre toured many countries of the world and Tarasova worked as a coach, ballet master and director. She then coached for 10 years at Simsbury, Connecticut's International Skating Center. Tatiana Tarasova is an Honoured Coach of the U.S.S.R. (1975), and has received numerous national awards. In March 2008, she was inducted into the World Figure Skating Hall of Fame.<sup>79-81</sup>

## Science

Among scientists, compared to artistic professions, there are fewer examples when children follow father's path, however, there are some outstanding dynasties. The Curies are definitely among them. One of the main founders of contemporary physics, Pierre Curie (1859-1906) was an outstanding French physicist and chemist. Initially Pierre specialized in crystallography, but eventually he joined his wife's research. Their discovery of radioactive elements radium and polonium earned them the 1903 Nobel Prize in Physics, shared with Henri Becquerel. His wife Marie -Curie (nee Skłodowska) (1867-1934), Polish and later naturalized French chemist and physicist also won a second Nobel Prize, in chemistry, in 1911, for continued study of radioactive elements.

Pierre Curie's father was a doctor. Pierre was educated by his father Eugene Curie and was good at mathematics. As early as 16, he earned his Bachelor of Science in mathematics at the Sorbonne (the University of Paris). By the age of 18, he earned his license (equivalent to Master's degree), and in 1885, his doctor's degree for research in magnetism. After this, in 1900, he became a professor of physics at the faculty of sciences at the Sorbonne.<sup>82</sup> Maria Skłodowska<sup>83</sup> was initially his student, but he realized her scientific potential as well as was charmed by her as a woman. At first she refused his proposal, but finally they got married. They were very devoted to each other, and common interests really united them. The term 'radioactivity' was introduced by them. He and Marie discovered radium and polonium in their investigation of radioactivity. Their daughter, Irene Joliot-Curie (1897-1956), and their son-in-law, Frédéric Joliot-Curie, were also physicists and chemists involved in the study of radioactivity, and each also received Nobel Prize in 1935 for their work. Frederic Joliot was Marie Curie's assistant at the Radium Institute. He fell in love with her daughter and the couple decided to change their surnames to Joliot-Curie.

As her parents were very busy with their work, Irene was cared for by her – retired by that time - grandfather Eugene Curie. Like her father, Irene was more educated in the family than in the rigid French education system that they disliked. She studied at a school organized by her mother and five more who taught their children to become scientists. However, she took her license and the doctor's degree from the Sorbonne. She was 28 when she became

a Doctor. Irene and Fred shared love for science and sports, as well as political views. "The fame and the achievement of her parents neither discouraged nor intimidated her....Her sincere love of science, her gifts, inspired in her only one ambition: to work forever in that laboratory which she had seen go up," wrote Eve Curie<sup>83</sup> on her sister Irene. During World War I, she worked with her mother at the mobile field hospitals, operating the x-ray machines that her mother developed.<sup>84-86</sup>

It is difficult to say who in this family impacted whom more, as all of them were very enthusiastic researchers, inspiring each other. Pierre said Marie was his muse. Pierre's and Marie's achievements inspired Irene and her husband. Pierre and Marie Curie's granddaughter, Helene Langevin-Joliot, is a professor of nuclear physics at the University of Paris, and their grandson, Pierre Joliot, who was named after Pierre Curie, is a noted biochemist. "Without the love of research, mere knowledge and intelligence cannot make a scientist", wrote Irene.<sup>86</sup>

Pierre Curie died as result of accident, while his wife, daughter and son-in-law died as result of radiation. Even their papers kept at at Bibliothèque Nationale de France are preserved in special lead boxes and the visitors have to wear special protective clothes. Had Pierre not been killed in an accident, he would have shared his family's destiny and die of radiation, as at that time the threat and, correspondingly, the protection against it, was not known. "Radioactivity had made the Curies immortal. Now it was killing them".<sup>87</sup>

Lord Charles Cavendish FRS<sup>1</sup>(1704 –1783) was a British nobleman and Whig politician. He also pursued science as a side interest, at a certain point leaving politics and becoming more involved with science. He had two children: Henry Cavendish (1731–1810), considered one of the most accomplished physicists and chemists of his era, and Frederick Cavendish. Charles Cavendish entered the House of Commons in 1725 and would remain a member in various seats until 1741. Afterwards, he took more interest in experimental research. In 1757 the Royal Society (of which he was vice-president) awarded him the Copley Medal for his work in the development of thermometers which recorded the maximum and minimum temperatures they had reached. Charles Cavendish was also one of the early experimenters with the electrical storage device, the Leyden jar, which came to England in 1746. His interest in electrical research was passed on to his son Henry who was also a prominent member of the Royal Society.

Henry Cavendish, chemist and physicist, was even better known than his father for electrical experiments, and also for other discoveries in physics, including the famous torsion-balance measurement of the mass of the earth. Henry's mother died when he was aged 2 and he was brought up by his father. In fact, he lived with his father until the latter's death in 1783 when Henry was already aged 52. Henry was tutored at home until he was eleven years old when he entered the fashionable Dr. Newcomb's Academy, a private boarding school in Hackney, East London. The school offered a 'modern' curriculum. This would have included mathematics, natural science, French and the classical languages. He studied at Cambridge University (St. Peter's College), however, did not graduate. Allegedly, he had some conflict dealing with compulsory religious tests. Lord Charles was an experimental scientist himself, so the house included a research laboratory. His father fully supported Henry's interest in

<sup>1</sup>Fellow of the Royal Society (of the UK)

research, however, some relatives were ashamed of him, as it was not an aristocrat's business 'to work'. On matters of intellect and fortune, he has been called "the wisest of the rich and the richest of the wise".<sup>88</sup>

Henry discovered hydrogen, among many other things. The Cavendish family was very aristocratic and had a strong tradition of public service including extensive political responsibilities, however, Lord Charles was not too well off. His son, besides his research activities managed to improve the family economic situation. At the age of 29 he became a Fellow of the Royal Society of London and he was elected to its Council when he was 34. He was also a trustee of the British Museum.

The Cavendish Laboratory is the Department of Physics at the University of Cambridge, and is part of the School of Physical Sciences. The laboratory was opened by William Cavendish, 7<sup>th</sup> Duke of Devonshire (1808-1891), Henry's cousin's grandson in 1874 as a laboratory for experimental physics and is named after Henry Cavendish. William Cavendish was educated at Eton and the University of Cambridge (Trinity College) and became the chancellor of London University at the age of 28, then the chancellor of Cambridge University. He donated funds for the construction of the laboratory. The laboratory has had a huge influence on research in the disciplines of physics and biology.

88-92

Pyotr Leonidovich Kapitsa or Peter Kapitza FRS (1894 –1984) was a leading Soviet physicist, engineer and Nobel laureate, best known for his work in low-temperature physics. Kapitsa was born in Kronstadt, Russian Empire. Besides Russian, the Kapitsa family also spoke Romanian. Kapitsa's studies were interrupted by the First World War, in which he served as an ambulance driver for two years. He graduated from the Petrograd Polytechnical Institute in 1918. He subsequently studied in Britain, working for over ten years with Ernest Rutherford in the Cavendish Laboratory at the University of Cambridge, and founding the influential Kapitza club. He was the first director (1930–34) of the Mond Laboratory in Cambridge. In 1934 Kapitsa returned to Russia to visit his parents but the Soviet Union prevented him from returning to Great Britain. Kapitsa founded the Institute for Physical Problems, partly using equipment which the Soviet government bought from the Mond Laboratory in Cambridge (with the assistance of Rutherford, once it was clear that Kapitsa would not be permitted to return). During World War II he was assigned to head the Department of Oxygen Industry. Immediately after the war, a group of prominent Soviet scientists, including Kapitsa, lobbied the government to create a new technical university, the Moscow Institute of Physics and Technology. Kapitsa taught there for many years. From 1957, he was also a member of the presidium of the Soviet Academy of Sciences and at his death in 1984 was the only presidium member who was not also a member of the Communist Party. In 1966, Kapitsa was allowed to visit Cambridge to receive the Rutherford Medal and Prize. In 1978, Kapitsa won the Nobel Prize in Physics "for his basic inventions and discoveries in the area of low-temperature physics". Pyotr Kapitza was awarded two Stalin's prizes (in 1941 and 1943), as well as six orders of Lenin – the highest awards in the USSR.<sup>93</sup>

Kapitsa was married in 1927 to Anna Alekseevna Krylova (1903-1996), daughter of applied mathematician A.N. Krylov. They had two sons, Sergey and Andrey.

Sergey Petrovich Kapitsa (1928- 2012) was a Russian physicist and demographer. He was best known as host of the popular and

long-running Russian scientific TV show, *Evident, but Incredible*. The goal of this show was to popularize scientific knowledge among population, for which he was awarded UNESCO's Kalinga Prize for the Popularization of Science in 1979 and the USSR State Prize in 1980. Sergey Kapitsa was born in Cambridge, while his parents were staying there. Sergey graduated from the Moscow Aviation Institute in 1949. His father also had an engineering education and believed that it would be a good education for a boy. He was Senior Research Fellow at the Lebedev Physical Institute, Russian Academy of Sciences and Professor at the Moscow Institute of Physics and Technology. Kapitsa's contributions to physics were in the areas of applied electrodynamics and accelerator physics; he is known, in particular, for his work on the microtron, a device for producing electron beams. In later years, his research focus was on historical demography, where he developed a number of mathematical models of the World System population hyperbolic growth and the global demographic transition. Sergey Kapitsa was the vice-president of the Russian Academy of Natural Sciences and president of the Eurasian Physical Society. Kapitsa pioneered scuba diving in the USSR, he shot the first underwater film about the Sea of Japan. He was also an excellent chess player.

Sergey's and Andrey's childhood in Cambridge was very comfortable. They lived in a mansion with a big garden and a tennis court. When Andrey was born, Sergey was envious as his brother had a baby carriage, later, when father bought his a bicycle, Andrey was envious of him. However, such problems were easily solved and they were very close with each other. They were surrounded by great people and their children – Ernst Rutherford and his granddaughter, Edgar Adrian, physiologist (in the future, the Nobel Prize winner) and his son Richard. This was a nourishing atmosphere for future scientists. Sergei wanted very much to visit his father's laboratory, and Pyotr Kapitza was glad to take him there. Sergey had a developing game called Meccano (like contemporary Lego, but more complicated). He liked building various constructions from it with his father, saying "We are working!" During school years, when his father was not occupied by work, he was making a motor boat at their country house, and Sergey eagerly helped him. During the war, the family was evacuated to Kazan, where Sergei studied as an external student. Although a schoolboy, as his father's son (who was working at the university), he had an opportunity to attend some university classes. The brothers also spent much time in observatory.<sup>94,95</sup>

Andrey Petrovich Kapitsa (1931 – 2011) was a Russian geographer and Antarctic explorer, discoverer of Lake Vostok, the largest subglacial lake in Antarctica. Andrey graduated from Moscow State University, Faculty of Geography, in 1953. He worked in the Laboratory of Experimental Geomorphology at the faculty since.<sup>94</sup>

Sigmund Freud (1856–1939) was an Austrian neurologist and the founder of psychoanalysis, a clinical method for treating psychopathology through dialogue between a patient and a psychoanalyst. Freud was born in Freiberg, in the Austrian Empire. He qualified as a doctor of medicine in 1881 at the University of Vienna. Freud lived and worked in Vienna, having set up his clinical practice there in 1886. In 1886, Freud resigned his hospital post and entered private practice specializing in "nervous disorders". The same year he married Martha Bernays, the granddaughter of Isaac Bernays, a chief rabbi in Hamburg.



# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

They had six children: Mathilde, Jean-Martin, Oliver, Ernst (1892-1970), Sophie, and Anna (1895-1982).

In 1938, Freud left Austria to escape Nazi persecution. He died in exile in the United Kingdom in 1939.

Anna Freud (1895–1982) was a British psychoanalyst. She was born in Vienna, the sixth and youngest child of Sigmund Freud and Martha Bernays. She followed the path of her father and contributed to the field of psychoanalysis. Together with Hermine Hug-Hellmuth and Melanie Klein, she may be considered the founder of psychoanalytic child psychology.<sup>96,97</sup>

Her relationships with her mother and other siblings, especially, her elder sister Sophie were not too good. Their father once spoke of her “age-old jealousy of Sophie”.<sup>96</sup> While learning in a boarding school, she wrote to her father how “all sorts of unreasonable thoughts and feelings plagued her”.<sup>96</sup> Later, also, Anna used to write letters to him, when he or she was away. The close relationship between Anna and her father was different from the rest of her family. She was a lively child with a reputation for mischief. Freud wrote to his friend Wilhelm Fliess in 1899: “Anna has become downright beautiful through naughtiness”.<sup>98</sup> According to Young-Bruehl,<sup>99</sup> in adolescence Anna took a great interest in her father's work, so she was allowed to sit in on the meetings of the newly established Vienna Psychoanalytical Society which Freud convened at his home. Like her father who had visitors from many countries and had to speak different languages, Anna learned English, French and some Italian. From 1915 to 1917, she worked as a teaching apprentice. With the encouragement and assistance of her father she pursued her exploration of psychoanalytic literature and in the summer of 1915 she undertook her first translation work for the Vienna Psychoanalytical Society. During 1916 and 1917 she attended the lectures on psychoanalysis her father gave at the University of Vienna. By 1918 Anna had gained his support to pursue a training in psychoanalysis and she went into analysis with him. Falling ill with tuberculosis in 1918, she resigned her teaching post in 1920. In 1923 her father was diagnosed with cancer, and their relations became even closer than they had been before. She also worked as her father's secretary.

After the Freud family left Vienna in 1938, Anna resumed her psychoanalytic practice and her pioneering work in child psychology in London, establishing the Hampstead Child Therapy Course and Clinic in 1952 (now the Anna Freud National Centre for Children and Families) as a centre for therapy, training and research work. In 1941 Anna Freud became one of the founders of the Hampstead War Nursery for children whose lives had been disrupted by the war. Anna Freud naturalised as a British subject in 1946. From the 1950s until the end of her life Freud travelled regularly to the United States to lecture, teach and visit friends. During the 1970s Anna was concerned with the problems of emotionally deprived and socially disadvantaged children, and she studied deviations and delays in development. At Yale Law School, she taught seminars on crime and the family. Her brother Ernst with whom she later developed good relationships and who became an architect in Vienna, died in 1970. Anna Freud was elected as a Foreign Honorary Member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences in 1959 and in 1973 she was made an Honorary President of the International Psychoanalytic Association. Anna Freud died in London in 1982. In 1986 her London home of forty years was transformed, according to her wishes, into the Freud Museum, dedicated to the memory of her father.<sup>99,100</sup>

Alexander Melville Bell (1819–1905) was a teacher and researcher of physiological phonetics and was the author of numerous works on orthoepy and elocution. In 1864 Alexander Melville Bell invented an international alphabet called Visible Speech, which showed deaf people how to shape their lips, tongues and throats when speaking. Those who were deaf, but not mute, by his methods could articulate words without hearing them, while they could ‘read’ other people's lip movements to decipher meaning. In 1887, his son, Alexander Graham Bell, sold off the intellectual assets owned by the Volta Laboratory Association. Graham used the considerable profits from the sale of his shares to found the Volta Bureau as an instrument “for the increase and diffusion of knowledge relating to the deaf” (Bruce, 1990, p. 412-413). The father and the son wrote articles and books together about phonetics and Visible Speech.

Alexander Graham Bell (1847–1922) was a Scottish-born inventor, US-Canadian scientist, and engineer who is credited with inventing and patenting the first practical telephone. He was baptized just as Alexander Bell, but he wanted to be discriminated by name from his grandfather and father, so his father agreed to add a middle name for him when he was 11. Alexander Graham Bell, supported by his family, was a curious boy: he collected a herbarium, learned the gesture language when his mother started turning deaf. He knew Visible Speech so well that he, being still a child, participated in his father's public demonstrations. Alexander Graham Bell attended the University of Edinburgh. In 1868, not long before he departed for Canada with his family, Bell completed his matriculation exams and was accepted for admission to University College London. His father encouraged Alexander Graham Bell's interest in speech and in 1863 took his sons (unfortunately, later Graham's brothers died of tuberculosis) to see a unique automaton developed by Sir Charles Wheatstone - a rudimentary “mechanical man” which simulated a human voice. The boys liked the idea so much that they made their own human head that could say a few words. In 1870, 23-year-old Alexander Graham Bell with his parents and his brother's widow, Caroline Margaret Ottaway, went to Canada. The Bell family soon purchased a farm at Tutelo Heights near Brantford, Ontario. At the homestead, Alexander Graham Bell set up his own workshop in the converted carriage house where he continued experiments based on German scientist Helmholtz's work with electricity and sound. Alexander Graham Bell's father was invited to the Boston School for Deaf Mutes (which continues today as the public Horace Mann School for the Deaf), in Boston, Massachusetts, United States, to introduce the Visible Speech System by providing training for Fuller's instructors, but he declined the post in favour of his son. Having moved to Boston in April 1871, Alexander Graham Bell proved successful in training the school's instructors, after which he was invited in several more school to train teachers. Then he continued private tutorship, and one of his pupils was Helen Keller who would later learn Braille alphabet for those who couldn't see. In 1872, Bell became professor of Vocal Physiology and Elocution at the Boston University School of Oratory. In 1875, Bell developed an ‘acoustic telegraph’ and drew up a patent application for it.

In 1882 Alexander Graham Bell became a naturalized US citizen and settled in Washington, DC. He co-founded the American Telephone and Telegraph Company (AT&T) in 1885. The fact that his grandfather (also named Alexander), father and brother had all been associated with work on elocution and speech and that both his mother and wife were deaf, profoundly influenced Bell's



life's work. His research on hearing and speech further led him to experiment with hearing devices which eventually culminated in Alexander Graham Bell being awarded the first U.S. patent for the telephone, on March 7, 1876. He also invented some technologies in optical telecommunications, hydrofoils, and aeronautics.<sup>101,102</sup>

As a conclusion to this chapter, I can say that the word "great" in this chapter stands to geniuses with worldwide recognition, but also to outstanding and well known in a particular country or sphere people. All of them, even if not living together with their children, have had a great impact on their personality formation and achievement. And there are many more such examples.

## Chapter 2: Special fathers

No less important for their children to achieve something in life are the fathers who themselves probably did not really have outstanding achievements, but played a great role in their children's future. Besides, some great people were wonderful fathers to ordinary (definitely, not to them!) children and supported them throughout their lives.

Alexandr Pushkin (1799-1837), the great Russian poet viewed as the father of Russian literature, was a father of four children: Maria, Natalia, Alexander, and Grigory. Two of his children were named after his wife and himself. Pushkin loved his children dearly, he called them in a diminutive way (Mashka, Natashka, Sashka and Grishka).

After Pushkin was mortally wounded in a duel defending his wife's honour, he requested his wife to get married two years after his death, so that she and her children would be protected. However, Natalia married Major-General Petr Petrovich Lanskoj only after seven years, in 1844. The general loved Pushkin's children like they were his own (by the way, he was also a stepfather of his prematurely deceased brother's three children).

The elder daughter, Maria, later served as the prototype (according only to her appearance, not her fate) of Lev Tolstoy's novel *Anna Karenina*. Her husband, Leonid Gartung, was mistakenly accused of embezzlement and shot himself in the courtroom (acquitted post-mortem). The episode triggered Tolstoy write *The Alive Corpse*, however he did not publish the play in his lifetime, realizing how it could hurt Maria's feelings.

Although Pushkin warned his children against becoming literary people, as they would be compared with him, which might have worked against them, Natalia was the only one who wrote a novel. The first Russian beauty, like her mother, Natalia was unhappily married to Mikhail Dubelt and later married morganically to Prince Nikolaus Wilhem of Nassau. She asked Ivan Turgenev to edit and publish a collection of her father's letters. Alexandr became a general, and was actively involved in the development of education in Russia. Grigory opened the first Pushkin's corner (his father's study in their estate Mikhailovskoye) where he gathered some poet's personal belongings and manuscripts. All children inherited Pushkin's genetics and this or that way continued his matter.<sup>103-106</sup>

Ferguson and Robertson<sup>107-108</sup> in their research found that the majority of parents of successful children followed the same pattern of relationships with them. They applied all or almost all of the following roles: the Early Learning Partner, the Flight Engineer, the Fixer, the Revealer, the Philosopher, the Model, the Negotiator and the GPS Navigational Voice. At early age, parents

play a huge role in the child's development: talking to him/her, involving in various activities, participating in games, etc. A real flight engineer is a person who monitors (and is responsible for) how the flight goes on. A parent who is in the role of the Flight Engineer is watchful of one's child, notices success and does his/her best to maintain it and helps to stand up if failure occurs. The Fixer provides that the child has the resources and the connections to succeed. The Revealer demonstrates to the child how various and exciting the world is. The Philosopher helps the child to set up the goals, to find the purpose of life. The Model behaves the way that the child would like to follow. The Negotiator helps the child in solving the problems, in dealing with people and trying to find the compromise that works. The GPS Navigational Voice is the parent opinion that the person tries to imagine and take into consideration probably even after s/he is no longer a child. Let us try to see whether this interesting formula applies to many successful people.

According to Le,<sup>109</sup> Albert Einstein's (1879-1955) parents performed all these roles, but they were especially Negotiators and Revealers. Albert attended violin classes and really disliked his teacher. He was thinking of quitting, but his parents persuaded him to continue on condition that they would move him to another music school. Eventually, violin became his lifelong passion which even helped him to have insight in physics.

Albert Einstein hated school as he was bored there. To help him maintain his motivation to learn, his parents created the best learning environment at home – bought and introduced to him interesting books, invited interesting people home and let him stay with adults during their discussions, and hired him best private tutors.

Albert's father, Hermann Einstein (1847-1902), was a salesman and engineer, so he wanted his son to pursue electrical engineering, but Albert clashed with the school authorities and resented the school's regime and teaching method. He later wrote that the spirit of learning and creative thought was lost in strict rote learning. The Einsteins taught their son self-reliance, and they let teenage Albert make his own decisions about his education, career, religion, and even citizenship. At the end of December 1894, he traveled to Italy to join his family in Pavia, convincing the school to let him go by using a doctor's note. Although he didn't have a school certificate yet and failed the general admission test, he revealed extreme abilities in physics and mathematics, so he was admitted to Swiss Federal Polytechnic School. While studying in Zurich, Albert met his future wife, Mileva Maric, a fellow physics student from Serbia – the only female at the school. Albert's mother very much opposed Albert's marriage with her due to the fact that she was Orthodox Christian, however, his father, fallen gravely ill, gave his blessing for their marriage. The period of 1902 was the most difficult of Albert Einstein, as, due to his uncompromising character, he had conflicts at jobs, and was able to get only low-paid jobs. For years, Einstein would experience enormous sadness remembering that his father had died thinking him a failure, as all his successes were still to come.<sup>110,111</sup>

A counselor to Henry VIII of England, philosopher and Renaissance humanist Thomas More (1578-1535) refused to support the King's split from the Catholic Church. For his trouble, he was arrested for treason and beheaded. By this refusal, he underlined his loyalty to the institute of marriage – Henry VIII could not have children with his wife and wanted a divorce in

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

order to marry another woman who would bear him a son. More was against divorce, so he was ready to sacrifice his life to his beliefs.

But before all that, More was a good dad. More married his first wife Jane, and had four children with her. They were a happy family until she died after six years of marriage. His second wife Alice was also a widow and had a daughter from her previous marriage. More and Alice did not any children together, but More welcomed Alice's daughter as his own child, treating her no differently than the four children he had with Jane. He also adopted two neighbor girls after the death of their mothers.

He provided his daughters the same classical education as his son, which was very unusual for 16th-century England. During More's imprisonment for treason in the Tower of London, his oldest daughter Margaret Roper visited him frequently. After his death, Roper bribed the man who was supposed to throw her father's head into the Thames River, saving it for a decent burial instead.<sup>112,113</sup>

Theodore Roosevelt, Sr. (1821-1878) was the father of U.S. president Theodore Roosevelt Jr. (1858-1919) who called his father "the best man I ever knew." Theodore Roosevelt, Sr. was a businessman and active in the family business of plate-glass importing. The family was wealthy and he was thus able to participate in philanthropy. Among other organizations, he helped found the New York City's Children's Aid Society, as he believed that all children should be cared for. "Great Heart," a moniker indicative of Thee's character and generosity, was universally admired for his kindness, philanthropy, and civic involvement.<sup>113,114</sup>

He combined strength and courage with gentleness, tenderness and great unselfishness. He would not tolerate in us children selfishness or cruelty, idleness, cowardice, or untruthfulness. As we grew older he made us understand that the same standard of clean living was demanded for the boys as for the girls; that what was wrong in a woman could not be right in a man. With great love and patience, and the most understanding sympathy and consideration, he combined insistence on discipline.<sup>114</sup>

My father" – wrote Theodore Roosevelt Jr. – "worked hard at his business, for he died when he was forty-six, too early to have retired. He was interested in every social reform movement, and he did an immense amount of practical charitable work himself. He was a big, powerful man, with a leonine face, and his heart filled with gentleness for those who needed help or protection, and with the possibility of much wrath against a bully or an oppressor."<sup>114</sup>

Theodore Jr. (Teedie) regarded his father "as the ideal man." He also fondly recalled his father's patient and loving care as Teedie had frequent asthma attacks. In time, Theodore Sr. challenged his namesake "to make his body" and overcome his infirmities. Eager to please the father he adored, Teedie committed himself to physical activity, a routine that remained with him well into adulthood. After a confrontation with bullies who pummeled Teedie, Thee encouraged his son to take up boxing.<sup>113,114</sup>

The naturalist and father of evolutionary theory Charles Darwin (1809-1882) had 10 children with his wife, Emma Wedgwood, seven of whom lived to old age. He doted on his children, and was devastated by the death of 10-year-old daughter Annie in 1851. Seven years later he was very upset by the death of his youngest

son Charles. Being worried that children might have inherited some health problems from him, he took children to doctors, to assess their health condition.<sup>113</sup>

His children remembered him as a loving storyteller who took interest in their lives and encouraged their freedom. "Indeed, it is impossible adequately to describe how delightful a relation his was to his family, whether as children or in their later life," Darwin's daughter Francis wrote in "Autobiography of Charles Darwin and Selected Letters".<sup>115</sup>

Compared to other Victorian fathers who were distant from their children, as they worked long hours and spent little time with their kids. Darwin mostly did research at home, so he had the luxury to communicate more with his children. Darwin kept a diary, in which he noted the steps in his children's development. It is not easy to say was it more a sign of a scientist's approach or due to fatherly care.

Darwin was preoccupied with providing his sons such education that would provide them a professional well-off future. However, his 15-year-old daughter Elizabeth was sent to a boarding school, upon her desire. Darwin encouraged his children to develop their own hobbies such as collecting stamps, beetles or domesticated animals. He supported their interest in botany, geology or heraldry, in drawing, literature or mathematics. After they became adults, he often asked his children's advice on matters about which he believed them to be knowledgeable, so that the three eldest – William, George and Henrietta – contributed significantly to his research and writing.

Croquet and especially billiards were favourite family games. Family trips to the seaside were often necessitated by ill health rather than pleasure.<sup>116</sup>

Mark Twain's (1835-1910) father John Marshall Clemens (1798-1847) was a serious man who seldom demonstrated affection, as his life was definitely hard and full of business failures. Besides, out of Samuel Clemens's (known to us under his pen-name Mark Twain) six siblings, only three grew up to be adults. John Clemens died of pneumonia, so Samuel had to drop out of school and start working.

The following quote is attributed to Mark Twain: "When I was a boy of 14, my father was so ignorant I could hardly stand to have the old man around. But when I got to be 21, I was astonished at how much the old man had learned in seven years."<sup>117</sup> However, Mark Twain was 11, when his father died. So, maybe these are the words of one of his personages, or probably the quotation has nothing to do with Mark Twain, except the paradoxical humour (Quote Investigator, n.d.). Whoever wrote the famous quote, he wanted to emphasize that young people often too late realize the value of their parents.

Mark Twain married Olivia Langdon in 1870. Their marriage lasted 34 years, and they loved each other tenderly. He was a devoted husband and father. However, his wife and three out of his children died in his lifetime, which brought this bright man with a fantastic sense of humour to a deep depression.

Langdon Clemens was his only son who lived only 19 months. His daughter Olivia Susan Clemens (Susy) was a baby when her brother died, so the parent doted on her. Mark Twain and his wife wrote down the funny sayings of his three daughters and published them as *The Children's' Record: A Record of the Small foolishnesses of Susie and 'Bay' Clemens August 1876 – 1885*.

Susy later wrote *The Extraordinary Mark Twain* (according to Susy), which reveals how close he was to his daughters. Susy died of meningitis in 1896 and the same year Twain's daughter Jean was diagnosed with epilepsy. In the search of the cure Mark Twain addressed many doctors throughout Europe. *The Death of Jean* (1911) was written beside her deathbed. He was writing, he said, "to keep my heart from breaking." Twain's youngest daughter Clara was a naughty child. When she grew up, she accompanied her parents on their round-the world trip in 1895-1896. She supported her father's grandfatherly friendship with "Angelfish club" – smart little schoolgirls he corresponded with. Clara was a good pianist and singer, but after her father's death she did not pursue her profession and managed his estate as well as guarded his legacy.<sup>118,119</sup>

**Dmitri Mendeleev** (1834-1907) was a Russian chemist and inventor best known for his periodic table of elements. He was a charismatic teacher and lecturer. Mendeleev fathered six children from two marriages: Vladimir, and Olga from his first wife, and Lubov, Ivan, Vasily, and Maria from his second wife. He wrote: "I have experienced a lot in my life, and I think there's nothing better than being with my children." All his children were well educated. Although he was strict with them and required that they kept silence while he was working, he was happy when they would drop into his office for a chat. He wrote: "Whatever I might be doing and however busy I might be, I always rejoice when one of them comes to me".<sup>120</sup>

Vladimir was educated in a private school and with home tutors. He chose a naval career. In 1898, Vladimir resigned from the Navy to develop a 'Project to raise the level of the Sea of Azov by the dam of the Kerch Strait'. After Vladimir died unexpectedly, his father published his son's project. With deep bitterness, Dmitri Mendeleev wrote in the preface: "My clever boy, my loving, gentle, good-natured first-born son died. He was part of my legacy, because I have always known his high and sincere, modest and at the same time deep thoughts and ideas – unbeknownst to many – that our homeland would benefit from."

Olga got married and was a housewife, she wrote a book of memoirs 'Mendeleev and his family', which was published in 1947. Lubov Mendeleeva married the great Russian poet Alexander Blok. His first cycle of poetry *Verses about the Beautiful Lady* are dedicated to her. Her relationships with Blok were strange and painful – he adored her, but with a platonic feeling, and she suffered a lot from his more earthly romances. She was the first to publicly recite his poem *Twelve*. She worked in the theatre, later she became a historian and a theorist in classical dance.

Ivan Mendeleev studied physics and mathematics and helped his aging father with calculations on economics. After his father's death he organized a school for peasants' children where he taught himself.

Vasily was an engineer and Maria a dog breeder. After the Great Patriotic war, she was appointed Director of the Dmitri Mendeleev Museum and Archives at Leningrad University. She dedicated much effort to her father's records and archives management.<sup>121,122</sup>

Philologist, art expert and founder of the Pushkin State Museum of Fine Arts **Ivan Tsvetaev** (1847-1913) graduated from Saint Petersburg State University in 1870 with the specialization in classical literature. He married Varvara Ilovayskaya, an opera singer. Largely under her influence, he gradually switched his

interests from classical philology to antiquities. The couple had a daughter, Valeria (1882-1966) and a son, Andrey (1890-1933). Ivan Tsvetaev was a professor at Warsaw University in 1872-1873 and at the University of Kiev in 1876-1877. He became a professor of history of fine arts at Moscow State University in 1877. Ivan Tsvetaev worked for the Rumiantsev Museum in Moscow from 1882 to 1889 and then was director of the Museum from 1900 to 1910.

Tsvetaev believed that Moscow needed a state-owned museum of fine arts where people could get acquainted with masterpieces of European art. He raised the funds, organized an architectural competition, and eventually in 1912 the museum was opened.<sup>123-125</sup>

After his first wife's death, Tsvetaev married Maria Meyn, a pianist. She became his children's step-mother and later they had two common daughters: Marina Tsvetaeva (1892—1941) and Anastasia ("Asya", 1894-1993), both of whom became well-known poets and writers.

Ivan Tsvetaev planted four hazelnut bushes in front of their house in Tarusa (a town in central Russia on the left bank of the Oka river) for each kid, and three fir-trees, for each daughter. Symbolically, when Marina Tsvetaeva died, her fir-tree dried up. Ivan Tsvetaev loved his children equally tenderly, and was very upset by their relations which were not as good as he wished. Initially, the elder sister revealed positive feelings towards younger sisters, however, she could not establish good relations with Marina. Finally, Marina maintained contact with Andrey, however, they were not too close.

Ivan Tsvetaev loved his wife and entrusted the relations among the children largely to her. Valeria practiced singing (as her mother was a singer), and Marina and Anastasia played the piano. Andrey did not play any instrument or sing in childhood, however, he independently learnt to play various musical instruments in adulthood. While Maria Tsvetaeva contributed a lot to their education, she, being strict and demanding with all of them (equally to step-children and her own children), was unable to establish close relationships among them. In 1906 Tsvetaev's second wife dies, too.

Tsvetaev's children grew up among outstanding representatives of Russian cultural elite, they all the time heard about the museum to which their father dedicated his life. Marina Tsvetaeva later mentioned that the Museum was their brother, the favourite with their father. It was only natural that they all were educated and intelligent, knew well art and history, but their lives were complicated.

Valeria participated in the studio lead by the famous American ballet dancer, Isadora Duncan, in Moscow, later she opened her own dance studio. Andrey was educated as a lawyer, but never worked as one. Anastasia was a writer. She was arrested twice for her views, which often happened in the Stalin era. Marina Tsvetaeva became one of the greatest Russian poets of the 20<sup>th</sup> century with a very tragic life: emigration, return to Russia, early marriage, separation from her husband, younger daughter's death, conflict with the elder daughter, birth of a son, execution of her husband, repressions, evacuation, and, eventually, suicide. It is not enough to provide good education to one's children – teaching them love and support each other is essential. But, of course, even this may not save them from the hardships of the historic period.<sup>126-128</sup>



The famous French singer, actor and diplomat **Charles Aznavour** born as Shahnour Varinag Aznavourian (1923-2018) was a son of Armenian immigrants, **Michael (Misha) Aznavouryan** (1897-1978) from Akhaltsikhe in present-day Georgia and Knar Baghdasarian from Adapazarı (in present-day Sakarya, Turkey). Charles's father, the son of a cook of the Russian Tsar Nicholas II, sang in restaurants in France before opening a restaurant offering food from the Caucasus called *Le Caucase*. The restaurant, which he, unfortunately, lost during the depression years, used to serve the visitors with French, Russian and Caucasian cuisine.

Although displaced, Charles's parents were tightly linked with the land of their parents. They taught their children, born in Greece and France, Armenian language, they told them about the places they were born and raised, about their history and culture.

Charles grew in a very multicultural environment. During his career, he sang in seven languages. He toured a lot over the world, and everywhere people found something very oriental and simultaneously very French in his songs. Charles's parents introduced him to performing at an early age, and he dropped out of school at age nine, taking the stage name "Aznavour".

During the German occupation of France, Germans often mistook his dark-haired family for Jews and, to survive, they had to prove they were not. On the other hand, the family, including Charles and his sister Aida, was involved in rescuing Jews in their own Paris flat, risking their own lives. In 2017 they received the Raoul Wallenberg Award for their wartime activities.

Father taught Charles everything – courage, persistence, compassion, love for Armenia, as well as Georgia and Russia, singing and acting. Aznavour used his fame to support his parents' home country – financially, politically and morally. His foundation "Aznavour for Armenia", started in 1988 following to the devastating earthquake in Armenia, collected millions for charity.

Aznavour's career spanned nearly eighty years, he authored and performed at least a thousand songs, three hundred albums, and in many films. The former French President Jacques Chirac named Aznavour an officer in the Legion of Honor for his political and social engagement. In December 2008, the singer was granted Armenian citizenship, and he had been the country's ambassador in Switzerland and to UNICEF since 2009. Yerevan, the country's capital, is home to a cultural center named after Aznavour.

The topic of fatherhood was very important to Charles Aznavour. He brilliantly performed the tragic role of father Goriot, in fact, robbed and forgotten by his selfish daughters, in the French movie "Le père Goriot" according to Honoré de Balzac's novel (I will return to the book in the next chapter).

He had six children from three marriages and cared about his children a lot. He once said his life was a flop, a flop as a father, a flop as a man, as he dedicated all his life to art and did not have enough time for many things. However, he, as usual, diminished himself, and his children were close to him and valued him. Probably, he said so due to the early death of his son Patrick of overdose, who, to please his father, learned the Armenian language. His son's death was his great pain and probably he felt responsible for not spending enough time with his son, whose life could have gone differently. But he was a devoted son and father, did more than he himself hoped to do, and it made him the beloved singer of three generations of people around the globe.<sup>129,130</sup>

**Yuri Alekseyevich Gagarin** (1934—1968), Soviet cosmonaut who in 1961 became the first man to travel into space. He was born in a village Klushino near a small town in West Russia, Gzhatsk (now Gagarin). He was the third child out of four in the family. His father was a carpenter at a collective farm. Gagarin graduated as a molder from a trade school near Moscow in 1951. He continued his studies at the industrial college at Saratov and concurrently took a course in flying. On completing this course, he entered the Soviet Air Force cadet school at Orenburg, from which he graduated in 1957.

Yuri's family was quite well off before the Great Patriotic War of 1941-1945 began. His parents cared for their children a lot, and till the war they used to have a happy childhood. While mother was kind, father, Alexey Ivanovich Gagarin (1902-1973) was strict and demanding, but very caring at the same time. In the evening, father told his children fairy tales. Among the tales, Yuri especially liked the one about a flying ship. Alexey Ivanovich did much woodwork at home, and taught Yuri to do it.

Already in October 1941 their village was occupied by fascists. Gagarin's house was one of those that they chose to live in, while the family was thrown away from it and had to live in a dugout made by his father. The father of the family was not called up to the army due to health problems (he had one leg shorter than the other), so during the occupation he stayed in the village. He was not part of partisan movement and worked as a miller, due to which, when Yuri underwent the selection to the group of cosmonauts and then when the decision about who would fly first was made, this might have caused problems. However, the decision was eventually in his favour.

Parents loved Yuri very much, and Yuri also loved them. At the age of 15 Yuri moved to Moscow, although parents requested him not to. When Yuri received his first salary, he sent some money to parents, but his father grumbled: "You could have bought something for yourself!" When Yuri decided to get married, parents told him that he had to do it once and forever, like them. They taught him to be modest and honest. Father was the supreme authority for Yuri. He taught him to overcome any challenges.

Parents did not know that Yuri was going to the cosmic space. He did not want to make them nervous beforehand. When they heard the news on the radio, they first thought that maybe that was another Yuri Gagarin, but then, when it was clear that it was their son, in work clothes, on foot his father rushed to town (covered 12 km) in order than to take a train to Moscow.<sup>131-135</sup>

The French undersea explorer **Jacques Cousteau** (1910-1997) co-invented the Aqua-Lung, a breathing device for scuba-diving, in 1943. In 1945, he started the French Navy's undersea research group. In 1951, he began going on yearly trips to explore the ocean on the research ship *Calypso*. Cousteau recorded his trips on the TV series *The Undersea World of Jacques Cousteau*. In 1996, the *Calypso* sunk.<sup>136</sup>

Cousteau taught his children to love the sea: "The sea, the great unifier, is man's only hope. Now, as never before, the old phrase has a literal meaning: we are all in the same boat."<sup>137</sup> Cousteau took his 7-year-old son Jean-Michel overboard while on the ship *Calypso*. Traveling around the world aboard the *Calypso*, Jean-Michel and his younger brother Philippe learned how to scuba dive and observe undersea environments alongside their red cap-wearing father. Cousteau, his sons and his wife Simone explored



the ocean deep and broadcast their findings of previously unseen sea life in more than 80 documentary films. In 1979, Philippe was killed in a seaplane accident, but Jean-Michel carries on his late father's aquatic environmentalism as a public voice for ocean conservation.

Jean-Michel Cousteau (born in 1938), already a noted French environmentalist, educator and documentary film producer, spent most of his adult life nurturing the work of his famous father. He wrote a book *My Father, The Captain* dedicated to his father and their common experiences. Although he went to school to study architecture, he eventually joined his father's Cousteau Society, serving for twenty years as executive vice president before striking out on his own in 1993 to produce environmental films.

The theoretical physicist and cosmologist **Stephen Hawking** (1942 – 2018) received his bachelor's degree in physics and chemistry at Oxford University. He obtained his doctor's degree in cosmology at Cambridge University. He became famous after authoring the book *A Brief History of Time*. Hawking's contributions to physics earned him many exceptional honours. In 1974 the Royal Society elected him one of its youngest fellows. He became professor of gravitational physics at Cambridge in 1977, and in 1979 he was appointed to Cambridge's Lucasian<sup>2</sup> professorship of mathematics, a post once held by Isaac Newton. Hawking was made a Commander of the Order of the British Empire (CBE) in 1982 and a Companion of Honour in 1989. He also received the Copley Medal from the Royal Society in 2006 and the U.S. Presidential Medal of Freedom in 2009.

In 1965 he married Jane Wilde. Soon after it Hawking's health began deteriorating. Stephen was diagnosed with amyotrophic lateral sclerosis (ALS). So, besides his achievements in science, he became equally well known for his disability-inducing struggle with ALS with the help of the computer that allowed him to communicate using a single working muscle in his cheek. Despite Stephen's illness, the couple had three kids together: Lucy, Robert and Tim. He remained close to his kids until he died at the age of 76.

Robert was born in 1967. As the eldest son, he often had to help his father. He remembered how, despite the disability, father accompanied him and his siblings to short trips, their sports lessons, and how he was fond of dancing. They listened to music together. Robert is currently in Seattle, Washington with his wife, daughter, and son. When he was younger, he was interested in becoming a physicist like his father, but he eventually became a software engineering. In *Eulogy for My Father* Robert write: "My father told us many times how proud he was of his children. At first, I was uncertain how to respond, not having had something like 'Hawking Radiation' named after me. After a while, I came to realise (and becoming a father myself helped here) that it was the inherent pride of a father in children he loved and who loved him. So, Dad, I am proud of you: the father".

Lucy, the only daughter of the Hawkings, was born in 1970. She is a journalist, novelist, educator, and philanthropist who is best known for writing children's books. She and her father co-authored a series of books together that fused creative storytelling and science.

Timothy was born in 1979. When he was growing up, he could not distinguish his father's speech like his elder siblings, so they

did not communicate much. Now he works at *LEGO* as a loyalty executive.

Hawking's children, said in a statement in connection with his death: "We are deeply saddened that our beloved father passed away today". "He was a great scientist and an extraordinary man whose work and legacy will live on for many years. His courage and persistence with his brilliance and humour inspired people across the world". "He once said: 'It would not be much of a universe if it wasn't home to the people you love.' We will miss him forever."<sup>138-141</sup>

**Lazaros Stefanidis** (born in 1957) is a sportsman and the founder and president of the AS Lazaros Stefanidis O Makedonas athletics club in Thessaloniki, Greece. By creating this club, he wanted to give people with disabilities more opportunities to practice sport and become a para athlete like him. Lazaros has already competed in three World Para Athletics Championships, but the Tokyo 2020 Paralympic Games were his first. What is his main achievement both as a person and a sportsman / coach is that his son Leontios Stefanidis (born in 1999), who practiced sports in his club, also took part in the Games. They were the only father and son at the Paralympics in Japan. "This is the best story written in sports, I feel already as a winner. It is a unique feeling and we are all very happy," said 64-year-old Lazaros. The 22-year-old Leontis was in action in the men's shot put F20. Lazaros competed in the men's shot F33. "I am proud that I will compete with my father at the Paralympics and that we will go together to the Games. I feel blessed that we will be together-" said Leontios before the Paralympics.

Initially, when his son saw him competing, he said he would have nothing to do with competitions, although he was in sports since babyhood. He had an intellectual impairment, but was a good sportsman, and his father always supported his desire to do sports. Leontios trained in all throw disciplines, but he chose shot put. Leontios said: "I chose athletics because of my father, but shot put was not because of him. It is very dynamic, you need a lot of technique, patience and persistence." He took the 4<sup>th</sup> place in shooting (F20) in Tokyo Paralympic games.

Lazaros participated in Men's Discus Throw F37 in IPC Athletics World Championships, Assen 2006 in Netherlands and gained 10<sup>th</sup> place, and gained 7<sup>th</sup> place in Tokyo (F33).

Hard work and persistence paid the price. Father and son had the first opportunity to represent Greece together in a major international championships in June 2020 when they took part in the European Para Athletics Championships in Bydgoszcz, Poland. The father finished the fourth in the Europeans, and the son – the fifth. Leontios did not take a medal, but that was just a detail as he achieved his main goal to qualify for Tokyo 2020. Leontios mentioned that it was his father who taught him never to give up. Human strength is unlimited, and one can achieve success which he has never imagined. The main thing is keep trying – this is the main lesson Leontios learned from his father.<sup>142-144</sup>

## Chapter 3: Book and movie character fathers

### King Leer & Father Goriot

These characters from different epochs, cultures and social layers had very similar destinies. Both Shakespeare's King Leer and Balzac's Father Goriot for me are sad figures of fathers who were abused and mistreated by their egotistic daughters.

<sup>2</sup>Henry Lukas (1610-1663), Member of Parliament for Cambridge University and founder of the Lucasian Chair of Mathematics.

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

The aging English King Lear decided to pass the throne in his lifetime to the worthiest of his daughters. He had loved them all and expected them to love him as much. However, he trusted words more than deeds. He asked his daughters – Goneril, Regan, and Cordelia – to speak about their feelings towards him. The elder daughters told him flattering lies, and he believed them (court life is full of beautiful lies). Cordelia, his youngest and favourite, innocently and sincerely said she had no words to express her love, and her father got angry.

Cordelia: Unhappy that I am, I cannot heave

My heart into my mouth: I love your majesty

According to my bond; nor more nor less...

Good my lord, You have begot me, bred me, loved me:

I Return those duties back as are right fit,

Obeys you, love you, and most honour you.

Why have my sisters husbands, if they say

They love you all? Haply, when I shall wed,

That lord whose hand must take my plight shall carry

Half my love with him, half my care and duty:

Sure, I shall never marry like my sisters,

To love my father all.<sup>145</sup>

Cordelia's answer is sincere, but also angry – at her sisters' (she knew them too well!) lies, but, probably, also, at her father who had arranged this awkward test in order to measure publicly their love by words.

As a king, Lear got used to and liked flattery. Therefore, he passed all the power to his elder daughters, and disowned Cordelia. Her fiancé, the king of France, loved her without her lands, so he married her and took her to his country. Goneril and Regan, insatiable in their wish for power and riches, deprived their father of the least privileges he had left to himself – his few servants and shelter. And this is what he told Goneril:

We'll no more meet, no more see one another:

But yet thou art my flesh, my blood, my daughter;

Or rather a disease that's in my flesh,

Which I must needs call mine: thou art a boil,

A plague-sore, an embossed carbuncle,

In my corrupted blood. But I'll not chide thee...<sup>145</sup>

"A disease that's in my flesh," – he did blame himself for the monsters he had brought up, but it was too late.

The elderly nobleman named Gloucester who used to serve Lear had an illegitimate son called Edmund, who wanted power at any price and tricked his father into believing that his legitimate son, Edgar, was trying to kill him. He also developed affairs with both Goneril and Regan (just in case to finally marry the sister who would get the throne). As result, Goneril poisoned Regan out of jealousy over Edmund, then, when her treachery to her husband was discovered, she killed herself.

Cordelia not only accepted her father, but also brought the French army in order to save her father, she sheltered her father, but

eventually they were captured. Lear went crazy, Cordelia was executed, and Lear died out of grief. Grief about the betrayal of his elder daughters, his wrong attitude towards all daughters, and Cordelia's death. A gloomy 'happy end' followed: Goneril's husband Albany (who in the end of the events started sympathizing with Lear) and Edgar (a victim of his half-brother's intrigues) were left to take care of the country.

Of course, one can say that, instead of being shocked by his daughters' ingratitude, king Lear should have given them true love and taught them to be kind, to love a human (their father) instead of a king, whom they flattered in order to get some benefits (eventually, the throne) from him. True values, including gratitude, do not come to kids by themselves, they are taught and not inherited. Through suffering only did Lear gain the knowledge of the difference between words and deeds.

Was Shakespeare's Lear just a king who lived in the feudal times when people would sell their soul for the throne? Or was he just a father who did (at least the way he understood) everything for his daughters, but two of them only cared about the property he would (or wouldn't) leave to them after he died (the sooner, the better)?! To me, he is a tragic figure in both cases, but, eventually, he is much more a betrayed father than a betrayed king.

However, did he suffer more as a king or as a father? If he really loved his daughters, wouldn't it have been fair to divide the power and the land equally between the three, instead of provoking them to lie for a good piece of cake?! Or did he want to see who of them would make a better ruler (=liar)? Then, why was he shocked with the result? By the way, is it by chance that his name is assonant to 'liar'?!<sup>146</sup>

The reason why I believe that king Lear was much more a betrayed human than a betrayed king is the obvious similarity between his story and the story of Father Goriot, a retired vermicelli maker, the father of two daughters, Anastasie and Delphine, who fished out of him all money and possessions, to get married successfully, pretending to be in need, while they spent it on ball dresses and jewellery.

The reader learns from Balzac's book that Jean-Joachim Goriot was a plain worker at a vermicelli factory, who finally managed to become the owner of his own business. He was happily married for seven years, but then his wife died, whereas he remained faithful to her memory and dedicated himself to raising his daughters. He managed to marry both daughters to aristocrats, while the ungrateful daughters were ashamed of their father who –after their successful marriages - was not respectable enough for them.

Monsieur Goriot retired at the age of 69, sold his business and settled in Madame Vauker's boarding house. At that time he had a lot of fashionable clothes and sufficient money to be treated in the boarding house with respect. Within three years, however, he lost his affluence, looks and health, as his spoiled daughters were demanding more and more from him. However, still, at every mention of his daughters he felt proud and his eyes shined like diamonds. "Goriot had raised the two girls to the level of the angels; and, quite naturally, he himself was left beneath them. Poor man! He loved them even for the pain that they gave him."<sup>147</sup>

The narrator of the novel, Rastignac, Father Goriot's neighbor at the shabby lodging house in Paris, met Madame Anastasie de Restaud at a ball and was attracted by her beauty. One day, while visiting her, he caught an eye of father Goriot, going out

of her house secretly. He thought that the old man had the same intentions towards Anastasie, but later he found out that he was her father and brought her some money. Later, Rastignac developed a love affair with the other sister, Madam Delphine de Nucingen. Although he knew where her money comes from, he developed a liking to her luxurious lifestyle, corrupted by it. With time Goriot spent all his money and sold all his possessions to 'save' (as he believed) his daughters and was already mentioned disrespectfully as 'Father Goriot' by other habitants of the boarding house.

The daughters, in turn, needed their father as long as they could get something from him, but then thought him 'an awkward acquaintance', and did not care about the ill, dying man. They no longer visited him and did not even attend his funeral. Father Goriot, who was step by step guessing what monsters he had brought up, still loved them faithfully, and till the last moment hoped that his daughters would come to see him. His heart was torn into pieces by two things – that he could no longer help his daughters and that they only wanted his possessions. The main difference between King Lear and Father Goriot is that the king finally 'saw the light', while Goriot died 'blind'. As I have mentioned earlier, the role of Father Goriot was brilliantly performed by the French chansonnier, actor, and diplomat Charles Aznavour. Goriot's suffering was so well reflected in Charles Aznavour's big sad eyes that one could not help believing him and sympathizing with him.

Fathers, do not spoil your daughters by your blind love! Dedicate your life to teaching them love, compassion, truthfulness, and not just the desire to lead an enjoyable life.

## Johann Friedrich Schiller – Don Carlos

The plot of Schiller's was based on a late seventeenth-century French novella by Abbé de Saint-Réal, which, in turn, was based loosely on historical facts. The theme of the play is the conflict between feelings and power. The major characters are Philip II, the powerful king of Spain and his potential heir, his son of first marriage Don Carlos, Prince of Asturias. Don Carlos had been engaged to the eldest daughter of King Henry II of France Elizabeth of Valois. The girl was beautiful and would inherit some French lands, so, due to political reasons, Philip II, to get the benefits faster, married her instead of letting his son do so, which caused rivalry and jealousy between the father and the son. However, the conflict between them was not simply personal, but also political. Both wanted power. Initially, Philip II was thinking of some progressive reforms in the country and hired the best teacher to Don Carlos – Marquis de Posa – to prepare his heir for the reforms. However, Philip was afraid that the liberal reforms would decrease the king's power, and that his son might get to the throne without waiting for his father's natural death. Philip's heart and brain were torn between the love of his son and court intrigues. Philip II was hesitating whether to listen to his enlightened advisor, Marquis Posa, and to carry out some liberal reforms (that his son was demanding) himself or to let his disobedient son be punished, but finally he obeyed the Great Inquisitor and gave his own son into his hands: "A monarch never can too dearly buy the peace of his own son – his only son".<sup>148</sup>

Don Carlos was announced insane and sent to prison, where he eventually died. Not out of nothing later came Sigmund Freud's ideas of son-and-mother mutual attraction (in this play it is a former bride, now the step-mother, but still...). Not only was it

based on the ancient Greek legend and tragedy by Sophocles – the Oedipus complex is the Freudian term that was named after a man (Oedipus) who unknowingly killed his father (Laius) and slept with his mother (Jocasta). Clashes between fathers and sons, unfortunately, occur from time to time and end (with or without murder) tragically. To me all such stories, which, unfortunately, have some real-life basis (e.g., "Sons and Lovers" by David Lawrence, where William Morel, the elder son of a rough miner and a delicate teacher, all the time protected his mother from his abusing father), should teach us that the relations between parents and children are complex, they are both innate (nature) and acquired (nurture), so we should not ignore either unconscious wild biological desires and competition or the conscious tender and mutually supportive feelings that have to be nurtured step by step, day by day, patiently and systematically, to provide a happy life to all.

## Nokolai Gogol - Taras Bulba

An aging Cossack, Taras Bulba, and his two sons, the younger, Andriy, and the elder, Ostap are the major characters. The time described, beginning of the 18<sup>th</sup> century was the period when Russia and Poland were fighting for some lands on their border. The Cossacks (in Russian Kazaks, from Turkic *kazak*, "adventurer" or "free man"), were an Orthodox Christian ethnic group, mostly Russians and Ukrainians by origin, dwelling on the borders of the Russian Empire. They had a tradition of independence, eventually they received privileges from the Russian government in return for military services). Ostap and Andriy had studied at the Kiev seminary and then returned home.

The elder, Ostap, began his scholastic career by running away in the course of the first year. They brought him back, whipped him well, and set him down to his books. Four times did he bury his primer in the earth; and four times, after giving him a sound thrashing, did they buy him a new one. But he would no doubt have repeated this feat for the fifth time, had not his father given him a solemn assurance that he would keep him at monastic work for twenty years, and sworn in advance that he should never behold Zaporozhe all his life long, unless he learned all the sciences taught in the academy. It was odd that the man who said this was that very Taras Bulba who condemned all learning, and counselled his children, as we have seen, not to trouble themselves at all about it. From that moment, Ostap began to pore over his tiresome books with exemplary diligence, and quickly stood on a level with the best. The style of education in that age differed widely from the manner of life. The scholastic, grammatical, rhetorical, and logical subtle ties in vogue were decidedly out of consonance with the times, never having any connection with, and never being encountered in, actual life.<sup>149</sup>

The contemporary reader would understand what kind of education and care the brothers received in those patriarchal times.

His younger brother, Andriy, had livelier and more fully developed feelings. He learned more willingly and without the effort with which strong and weighty characters generally have to make in order to apply themselves to study. He was more inventive-minded than his brother, and frequently appeared as the leader of dangerous expeditions; sometimes, thanks to the quickness of his mind, contriving to escape punishment when his brother Ostap, abandoning all efforts, stripped off his gaberdine and lay down upon the floor without a thought of begging for mercy. He too



thirsted for action; but, at the same time, his soul was accessible to other sentiments. The need of love burned ardently within him. When he had passed his eighteenth year, woman began to present herself more frequently in his dreams; listening to philosophical discussions, he still beheld her, fresh, black-eyed, tender; before him constantly flitted her elastic bosom, her soft, bare arms; the very gown which clung about her youthful yet well-rounded limbs breathed into his visions a certain inexpressible sensuousness. He carefully concealed this impulse of his passionate young soul from his comrades, because in that age it was held shameful and dishonourable for a Cossack to think of love and a wife before he had tasted battle.<sup>149</sup>

It is clear that their warrior father first of all expected his sons to be brave warriors and to fight for Russia against the Poles. However, Andrii fell in love with a Polish noblewoman and on his own will went over to the Poles.

“And what are my father, my comrades, my country to me?” said Andrii, with a quick movement of his head, and straightening up his figure like a poplar beside the river. “Be that as it may, I have no one, no one!” he repeated, with that movement of the hand with which the Cossack expresses his determination to do some unheard-of deed, impossible to any other man. “Who says that the Ukraine is my country? Who gave it to me for my country? Our country is the one our soul longs for, the one which is dearest of all to us. My country is—you! That is my native land, and I bear that country in my heart. I will bear it there all my life, and I will see whether any of the Cossacks can tear it thence. And I will give everything, barter everything, I will destroy myself, for that country!”<sup>149</sup>

This is what Andrii told the girl. His father, of course, did not believe the man who informed him about his son now serving the enemy, he was shocked to learn about it, but eventually, when he found out it was true, he believed it to be a horrible treason, so he shot Andrii, saying the famous words: “I gave you life, I will also kill you!”<sup>149</sup> He felt responsible for his ‘mistake’ (that he was unable to upbring his son the way he had to), and he decided that it was him who had to ‘correct’ his ‘mistake’. I might have understood him if he went crazy, committed suicide, but killing his son?!!! People should be responsible for what they do, but not at such a price!

Taras was eventually captured by the Poles and burned alive on a commanding height.<sup>150</sup> Nowadays the novella is often criticized in Europe for Gogol's anti-Polish and anti-semitic views. By the way, he spent a large part of his life in Italy, wrote there more freely than in Russia, was one of the most ‘European’ of Russian writers, however, he just reflected the situation in the times when the novella developed. Today it's a popular trend to view the past at today's angle, I personally (with my ‘conservative’ views – in this context this word is a synonym of ‘traditional’ and rather positive than negative) do not disapprove of Gogol for the realistic presentation of reality (probably seen from only one side – the Russian one, but it was only natural of him, a Russian citizen), as well as, for example, Robinson Crusoe is not simply a traveler and adventurer, but also a typical representative of English colonialism of his time, which does not diminish the humanistic and adventure soul of Defoe's novel.

When I read “Taras Bulba”, as a girl of 14, I wasn't interested in ethnic questions, but I was shocked by the fact that a father, who is expected to be the major protector, killed his son. I was told

at school that it was his great patriotism – to put his love to his country in front of his love to his son. I don't know. Till today I think that whatever ideology (religious, patriotic, political), power (as in the previously viewed play by Schiller), or money - they cannot justify for me a father murdering his child. Patriotism is not an empty high-flown word for me, it matters a lot, but killing one's child?!!! I don't like the novella, while I admire Gogol's satirical plays and his “Dead Souls.” I just incorporated this book in my book on fatherhood to show how tragic may be different values of father and his child, and how important it is to do one's best to provide common values in the family. Love vs. family and fatherland? I don't know, I don't want anybody to stand in front of such a horrible choice, but I can't say I approve of what either Andrii or his father had done.

## Leo Tolstoy – War and Peace

One of my most respected authors is the great Russian writer Leo Tolstoy. His genius novel “War and Peace” contains many plots and sub-plots, but when I for the first time read the novel at the age of 15, especially interesting for me were the figures of two fathers – Prince Nikolay Bolkonsky with his children Prince Andrey, one of the central characters of the novel, and Princess Maria, and Count Ilya Rostov, with his four children, Natasha, the major female character of the novel, Vera, Nikolay (Nicholas) and Petya.

Although the Rostovs had a house, well-known in Moscow for hospitable receptions, they spent more time in their mansion in the village and much of the novel's action takes place there.

The readers get acquainted with the family in Moscow. Count Ilya Andreyich had a “full, cheerful, clean-shaven face” and was a “man who enjoys life and knows how to live, he swayed to and fro with dignity, offered surmises about the weather, or touched on questions of health, sometimes in Russian and sometimes in very bad but self-confident French; then again, like a man weary but unflinching in the fulfillment of duty, he rose to see some visitors off and, stroking his scanty gray hairs over his bald patch, also asked them to dinner”.<sup>151</sup> Unfortunately, enjoying life eventually lead him to card debts which his elder son ‘inherited’ and had to pay off after his father's death.

This is how Natasha Rostova is described when the readers meet her for the first time “This black-eyed, wide-mouthed girl, not pretty but full of life—with childish bare shoulders which after her run heaved and shook her bodice, with black curls tossed backward, thin bare arms, little legs in lace-frilled drawers, and feet in low slippers—was just at that charming age when a girl is no longer a child, though the child is not yet a young woman”.<sup>151</sup>

In the same chapter we meet her elder brother Nicholas: “Nicholas was short with curly hair and an open expression. Dark hairs were already showing on his upper lip, and his whole face expressed impetuosity and enthusiasm”.<sup>151</sup>

Little Petya was only mentioned at this stage. In chapter XII, book 1 the readers for the first time ‘see’ the Rostovs' elder daughter, the handsome elder daughter, Countess Vera: “... The smile did not enhance Vera's beauty as smiles generally do; on the contrary it gave her an unnatural, and therefore unpleasant, expression. Vera was good-looking, not at all stupid, quick at learning, was well brought up, and had a pleasant voice; what she said was true and appropriate, yet, strange to say, everyone—the visitors and countess alike—turned to look at her as if wondering why she had said it, and they all felt awkward.

"People are always too clever with their eldest children and try to make something exceptional of them," said the visitor.

"What's the good of denying it, my dear? Our dear countess was too clever with Vera," said the count. "Well, what of that? She's turned out splendidly all the same," he added, winking at Vera.<sup>151</sup>

The Rostovs had had 12 children, however, by the beginning of the novel only four of them had survived – that was the reality of those times when medicine was not as well developed as nowadays. However, the whole family was cheerful, full of energy, friendly, sympathetic, sort of naive, open-hearted, except the rational Vera. Probably, that is why nobody in the family was too close to her. Ilya Andreyich did mention that Vera was clever, however, he 'blamed' it with a laughter on his wife's efforts. All children were loved in the family, however, Natasha was a favourite, especially with her father.

Of course, the Rostovs were the people of society, however, they (as it was widely spread among the middle level of Russian aristocracy) were close to their servants and serfs - they were like one big family, especially when getting ready to events like hunting. Of course, the serfs did their hard jobs, while the count's family was having a good time, but, what's important, no cruel treatment (as it often happened among the aristocrats of the time) is mentioned in the novel. All children (again, except Vera) were brought up in the tradition of closeness to common people. While Natasha's love of her country was subconscious, the boys were eager to sacrifice their lives to fighting against Napoleon's invasion. Their ambition was to serve the country, not to gain any posts or rewards. Nicholas became a brave military officer.

Formerly, when going into action, Rostov had felt afraid; now he had not the least feeling of fear. He was fearless, not because he had grown used to being under fire (one cannot grow used to danger), but because he had learned how to manage his thoughts when in danger. He had grown accustomed when going into action to think about anything but what would seem most likely to interest him—the impending danger. During the first period of his service, hard as he tried and much as he reproached himself with cowardice, he had not been able to do this, but with time it had come of itself. Now he rode beside Ilyin under the birch trees, occasionally plucking leaves from a branch that met his hand, sometimes touching his horse's side with his foot, or, without turning round, handing a pipe he had finished to an hussar riding behind him, with as calm and careless an air as though he were merely out for a ride. He glanced with pity at the excited face of Ilyin, who talked much and in great agitation. He knew from experience the tormenting expectation of terror and death the cornet was suffering and knew that only time could help him.<sup>151</sup>

Petya was too young (16 years old) to join the functioning army, so the parents resisted to his desire. As he insisted and threatened to run away (and the children in the Rostovs' family had a lot of freedom in decision-making), finally his father found him a relatively safe position of a general's orderly (adjutant), but it did not preserve his life. It was a great tragedy for the whole family, but especially for the father, who felt guilty that he had permitted the son to join the functioning army.

"...all the same I can't study now when..." Petya stopped short, flushed till he perspired, but still got out the words, "when our Fatherland is in danger".<sup>151</sup>

"...he, Count Rostov, in spite of his youth wished to serve his country; that youth could be no hindrance to loyalty, and that he was ready to..."<sup>151</sup>

Natasha Rostova was a very emotional and romantic young girl who wanted (metaphorically) to fly. She was dreaming of a great love, and she met Count Andrey Bolkonsky who was widowed by the time (his wife died in labour and left him a son). Handsome, upright, reserved, with a Byronic look, self-controlling, experienced, clever and educated – so different from Natasha, but so attractive at the same time, that it was him whom she perceived as her 'prince on a white horse'. She immediately fell in love, crazily, wholeheartedly, while he just decided that this naive emotional girl was his chance to revive after his wife's death in labour. Andrey's father (we will speak about his qualities a little later) was not excited at the perspective of their marriage – the Rostovs' rank in the society was not as high as his, besides, he was afraid that his son whose first marriage wasn't a happy one would make one more mistake by marrying Natasha. Therefore, Prince Nikolay Bolkonsky told his son that he would agree to their marriage only if they test their feeling for one year – wait without seeing each other, only sometimes exchanging letters. One year! That meant eternity for quicksilver character as Natasha was! For Andrey it seemed a reasonable, although hard, requirement, so he decided to obey. Natasha thought only of him, recollected their moments, but she couldn't stop living for a whole year. So, inexperienced as she was, when she met an experienced womanizer Anatole Kuragin (who was secretly married, but hid it from her), she got under his spell and was ready to run away with him – a horrible shame for her and the family in those times. Due to her cousin (Sonya) informing on Natasha to her mother, the affair was prevented, however, the shame of the situation was still there. The engagement had to be broken. Although the parents locked her up (in order to protect her, not as a punishment), they sympathized with the poor inexperienced girl and tried to soothe her pain. Later, when Natasha by chance met the deadly wounded Andrey and they reconciled (Natasha wholeheartedly apologized and Andrey forgave her and told her he loved her – however, in a different, non-earthly way), the parents accepted their reconciliation. They, especially the kind father, were always on their children's side.

Now about Prince Nikolay Bolkonsky. An elderly man, a retired general, he was strict with all serfs and family members, beginning with himself.

With those about him, from his daughter to his serfs, the prince was sharp and invariably exacting, so that without being a hardhearted man he inspired such fear and respect as few hardhearted men would have aroused.<sup>151</sup>

He caused feelings of fear and respect simultaneously. He was clever and educated, hardworking, doing physical and intellectual work, accurate and punctual. He lead a healthy life, doing physical exercise, neither drinking alcohol, nor overeating – not a very typical life style for Russian aristocracy. He would be able to promote his son, with his connections (he even closely knew the commander-in-chief Kutuzov), however, he believed that Prince Andrey should himself achieve success. Compared to the young Rostovs, Andrey's ambition in the beginning of the war with Napoleon was to show the world how brave he was and to get the relevant military awards and promotions. Only later, with the harsh experience (when he lay wounded in the battlefield), had he learned that people's ambitions in the war are like ants' activities and they matter nothing compared to the eternal sky, which was the only thing that mattered.

Prince Nikolay Bolkonsky disapproved of Andrey's silly first wife, however, was hospitable to her, his son's wife expecting a baby,

while his son was in the army, and took care of her. It has already been mentioned that he was afraid that his son would repeat his mistake and, to avoid it, put up a too demanding condition for Andrey's and Natasha's marriage to become possible. Probably, he ruined their happiness, and their lives could have gone a very different way, but his son had never blamed him of it.

Prince Nikolay Bolkonsky delivered mathematics lessons to his daughter Princess Maria and was a very strict teacher. It was, by the way, unbelievable at those times to expect an aristocratic girl to study mathematics as well as teaching one's daughter himself instead of hiring a foreign governesses. However, he believed that mathematics best develops brain and she needs to be clever. He cared very much about his children being clever and educated.

As Princess Maria was not very bright at math, her brain and the remnants of her ability to think logically were blocked by the severe criticism of her father, which enraged him.

The princess looked in a scared way at her father's eyes glittering close to her; the red patches on her face came and went, and it was plain that she understood nothing and was so frightened that her fear would prevent her understanding any of her father's further explanations, however clear they might be. Whether it was the teacher's fault or the pupil's, this same thing happened every day: the princess' eyes grew dim, she could not see and could not hear anything, but was only conscious of her stern father's withered face close to her, of his breath and the smell of him, and could think only of how to get away quickly to her own room to make out the problem in peace. The old man was beside himself: moved the chair on which he was sitting noisily backward and forward, made efforts to control himself and not become vehement, but almost always did become vehement, scolded, and sometimes flung the exercise book away.<sup>151</sup>

However, Princess Maria loved her father, as she knew that he loved her. How can one judge Father? But even if one might, what feeling except veneration could such a man as my father evoke? And I am so contented and happy with him. I only wish you were all as happy as I am."<sup>151</sup>

These lessons reminded me so much of my father's classes of physics with me, when he asked "What don't you understand" and I said "Everything", which drove him crazy, so I felt very sympathetic with Princess Maria. However, she believed her father was the kindest man possible (so did I think about my father). Prince Nikolay Bolkonsky never said tender words to his children, but they knew, felt inwardly, how much he cared about them. Napoleon's invasion and initial retreat of the Russian troops, followed by his son's death were horrible blows, so he died of a cerebral stroke.

Both fathers in Tolstoy's novel were patriarchic, however, in different ways: Count Rostov was kind, simple, open and close with his children, while Prince Bolkonsky was educated, ambitious, formal and arrogant (while deeply caring for his children). Both raised worthy children, each in his way. There are so many ways for fathers to care for their children, however, being close and warm with them permits children to be happier in their further lives.

## Mr. Bennet in "Pride and Prejudice" by Jane Austen

The topic of the novel is the pride of rank and fortune and prejudice against the social inferiority. The setting was rural early 19<sup>th</sup> century England, although some events occurred

in London. Although Mr. Bennet is not a major character of the novel, he is definitely an important one, as all events are scrutinized through his eyes. Mr. Bennet, an owner of the Longbourn estate in Hertfordshire, had five daughters, but, according to the English feudal law, all his property could only be passed to a male heir - his nephew Collins. His wife had little inheritance, so there was little hope that the girls would be well-off and independent (including in the choice of fiancés), unless married to men of higher than their standing. That is why she was obsessed with the idea of getting her daughters well married. On the other hand, Mr. Bennet was a clever man with a sarcastic character man who seemed remote from family business, all the time busy with reading newspapers and books. He disliked all that fuss around his daughters' marriage and believed in the clear mind of his daughter Elizabeth.

[Mr Bennet] captivated by youth and beauty, and that appearance of good humour which youth and beauty generally give, had married a woman whose weak understanding and illiberal mind had very early in their marriage put an end to all real affection for her. Respect, esteem, and confidence had vanished for ever; and all his views of domestic happiness were overthrown. But Mr. Bennet was not of a disposition to seek comfort for the disappointment which his own imprudence had brought on, in any of those pleasures which too often console the unfortunate for their folly or their vice. He was fond of the country and of books; and from these tastes had arisen his principal enjoyments. To his wife he was very little otherwise indebted, than as her ignorance and folly had contributed to his amusement. This is not the sort of happiness which a man would in general wish to owe to his wife; but where other powers of entertainment are wanting, the true philosopher will derive benefit from such as are given.<sup>152</sup>

Mr. Bennet was fond of his two oldest daughters - especially his favourite, Elizabeth - but made laugh of the rest of the family viewing them as silly, which, however, doesn't mean he didn't care for what would happen to them. While Mr. Bennet concentrated on Elizabeth, who was clever, sensible, and had a strong character (so trying to have an arranged marriage for her was useless), Mrs. Bennet was busy, trying to arrange good marriages for other, sillier, daughters. Mr. Bennet disrespected the society's conventions and mocked his wife's obsession with finding 'suitable' husbands for their daughters. He simply wanted his daughters to be happy. "Mr. Bennet was so odd a mixture of quick parts, sarcastic humour, reserve, and caprice, that the experience of three-and-twenty years had been insufficient to make his wife understand his character" (chapter 1). "With a book he was regardless of time..."<sup>152</sup>

Mr. Collins, Mr. Bennet's cousin and the heir to the Longbourn estate, visited the Bennet family. He was a pompous clergyman who intended to marry one of the Bennet girls (he needed a hardworking wife and, being not too rich himself, didn't hope for a better match). After learning that Jane might soon be engaged, he quickly decided on Elizabeth, the next daughter in both age and beauty. Mr. Collins proposed to Elizabeth. She rejected Collins, to her mother's fury and her father's relief.

When Charles Bingley met the sisters at a ball, he took an immediate interest in the beautiful and shy Jane. He was good-looking and with good manners, and Jane and him developed quite an affection with each other. However, Bingley suddenly left for London, without explanations.



Elizabeth shared her father's views of society: she rejected wealth and rank as the source happiness. That is why she was initially prejudiced against the rich aristocratic landowner Fitzwilliam Darcy, because she saw his excessive pride. More than that, she believed he was the reason why Mr. Bingley didn't marry her sister Jane. Later she revised her opinion of him, understanding that he was a noble, brave, modest and shy man, hiding this fact under the mask of arrogance. Finally they developed a love affair.

The third daughter, Mary, was bookish, but eventually silly and pompous (education does not always ensure intelligence!). The youngest (and the silliest) Bennet sister, Lydia, eloped with Lieutenant George Wickham, who obviously didn't plan to marry her. Darcy knew that Wickham, the son of his late father's steward, wasted the money he received from his father and, when impoverished, asked for the living again. After being refused, Wickham tried to elope with Darcy's 15-year-old sister, Georgiana, hoping to get her considerable dowry.

Darcy, together with Mr. Bennet, went to London, and eventually, to save the Bennet daughters' good name, Darcy persuaded the dishonest man to marry Lydia (which was the only possible outcome in the situation) by offering him money.

Here are Elizabeth's thoughts concerning the situation: "How strange this is! And for *this* we are to be thankful. That they should marry, small as is their chance of happiness, and wretched as is his character, we are forced to rejoice. Oh, Lydia!"<sup>152</sup> On the other hand, "Mr. Bennet had very often wished before this period of his life that, instead of spending his whole income, he had laid by an annual sum for the better provision of his children, and of his wife, if she survived him. He now wished it more than ever."<sup>151</sup> He was very suffering that he couldn't provide Lydia with enough property so that Wickham would marry her without this shameful story.

Darcy also explained to Bingley, who was his friend, that his earlier opinion had been wrong and that Jane sincerely loved Bingley and was not after his position in the society as he had earlier thought, after which Bingley returned to Hertfordshire and got engaged to Jane.

"You are a good girl;" he [Mr. Bennet] replied, "and I have great pleasure in thinking you will be so happily settled. I have not a doubt of your doing very well together. Your tempers are by no means unlike. You are each of you so complying, that nothing will ever be resolved on; so easy, that every servant will cheat you; and so generous, that you will always exceed your income".<sup>152</sup>

When eventually Elizabeth and Darcy decide to marry, Mr. Bennet (knowing Lizzy's previous feelings towards Darcy) told her: "Lizzy," said her father, "I have given him my consent. He is the kind of man, indeed, to whom I should never dare refuse anything, which he condescended to ask. I now give it to *you*, if you are resolved on having him. But let me advise you to think better of it. I know your disposition, Lizzy. I know that you could be neither happy nor respectable, unless you truly esteemed your husband; unless you looked up to him as a superior. Your lively talents would place you in the greatest danger in an unequal marriage. You could scarcely escape discredit and misery. My child, let me not have the grief of seeing *you* unable to respect your partner in life. You know not what you are about".<sup>152</sup>

After Elizabeth told him about the reasons why she changed the opinion and feelings towards Darcy, his heart so much melted

that he was even ready to share his wife's plans for marrying the remaining two daughters.

## **The Fate of a Man by M. Sholokhov (book and movie – directed by S. Bondarchuk)**

The story is told by a truck driver Andrey Sokolov to a man he pick up on the road. He got wounded in the first months of WWII and was captured by the Nazis. What gave him the power to withstand all sufferings, physical and moral, in the concentration camp, were the thoughts of his country and his family. The Nazis wanted him to become a traitor, but he didn't, and even they respected him. He didn't drink for Hitler's health for a piece of bread. The shocked Germans didn't execute him, but gave him some food which he shared with other prisoners in his barrack. Then he was given a job of a driver, and in 1944 he managed to escape, kidnapping his major. In hospital, he wrote a letter to his wife, which, after some time, was answered by his neighbor: his wife and daughters had died during bombing. "Everything went dark before my eyes and my heart squeezed into a tight little ball so that I thought it would never open up again... Once I had had a family, a home of my own, it had all taken years to build, and it was all destroyed in a flash".<sup>153</sup> However, his son was alive and he had gone to the front. So, Andrey returned to the army where he got a letter from his son. He again had for whom to live and fight. But on the victory day, May 9, 1945, his son was killed by a sniper.

"Sometimes I can't sleep at night, I just stare into the darkness and I think: 'What did I do it for, life, why did you maim me like this? Why did you tear the guts out of me?' And I get no answer, either in darkness or when the sun's shining bright... No, I get no answer, and I'll never get one..."<sup>153</sup>

Andrey didn't want to return to his native Voronezh where everything would remind him of his family, so he went to a small town Uriupinsk where his friend lived. He worked hard, to have no time for the gloomy thoughts. One day he met a homeless boy Vanya. His mother was killed in an air raid (during the evacuation, probably), and his father was killed at the front, as the boy told him. The boy was lonely and desperate, so Andrey decided to tell him he was his father who hadn't been killed, but survived – he was the little boy's father!

"He threw his arms round my neck, he kissed my cheeks, my lips, my forehead, and started chirping away like a singing bird: 'Daddy dear! I knew it! I knew you'd find me! I knew you'd find me whatever happened! I've been waiting so long for you to find me!' He pressed himself to me, and he was trembling all over, like a blade of grass in the wind. My eyes were misty, and I was trembling too, and my hand were shaking..."<sup>153</sup>

They both got a chance to build a happy life, a life in a family, where the father would care for the son. All sufferings were not in vain – the man got a meaning in life, caring for a little orphaned boy, doing his best to make him happy. Happiness, after all, is not enjoying the pleasures of life, first of all, it is having somebody to care for. And fatherhood is both great responsibility and great happiness.

For Sergei Bondarchuk the movie "The Fate of a Man"<sup>154</sup> was a debut as a film director, and a very successful one, which would later bring him to the level of "War and Peace." He also performed the major role impressively. Although both the novella and the movie aimed to show the strength and the humanism of a

Soviet man, both were produced in such a way that they became symbolic of humanism and humanity. The movie focuses on a human experience in the bleak misery of war. Andrey Sokolov had lost everything, but his soul revived, so strong is his need to care and to be cared for.

The topic of a man caring for children is continued in another movie where Bondarchuk plays the role of step-father who is kinder for and more understanding of the little boy than his own mother. In the movie "Serge".<sup>155</sup> The woman remarried and was leaving her little son of the first marriage with her mother and going with her husband to the place of his work. She said that with his weak health he would be better where he was, but the poor boy was so suffering, that his step-father couldn't endure it and decided to take the boy with them.

## **Soldier's Father (movie, 1964, directed by R. Chkheidze)**

A tragic movie about the WWII with some melodramatic and even comic episodes. The scriptwriter S.Zhghenti served in the army during the war and the prototype of the major character in the movie served with him. An elderly peasant Giorgi Makharashvili performed in a heartfelt way by Sergo Zakhariadze (1909-1971) during the second year of the Great Patriotic War goes to visit his son in hospital. However, when he reaches the destination, his son Goderdzi has already recovered and returned to the front. He continues his way and finally joins the army trying to catch up his son. He becomes a father-like figure for other young men and they address him 'Father'. In this way Giorgi Makharashvili, like his son, reaches Berlin, where they find each other, but only hear and speak to each other, then the son is deadly wounded and dies in his father's arms.

Although shot in Russian, the movie is deeply Georgian – beginning with the major character, a peasant from Kakheti, region of Georgia famous for growing vine, who cannot tolerate when a soldier overruns a vine by tank in Germany, because he knows how much work is necessary to grow it. A vine and wheat are symbol of life for him. He fights to see his son, but also to help the young boys survive, and to bury them decently when they are dead. According to his nature, Giorgi Makharashvili is a peasant, not a soldier, war is against nature for him. The main thing for him is his family and his land. However, he fights heroically and a bullet does not touch him. He fights in order to bring peace to his land, to grow children and crops. Together with other soldiers he has achieved his goal, peace, but without his son, its value diminished. Nevertheless, Giorgi Makharashvili is proud of his son and realizes that many fathers don't meet their children after war is ended, but life for which they gave their lives continues. The movie won Moscow International Film Festival 1965 best actor prize and a special awards the film director at Thessaloniki Film Festival 1965.<sup>156-158</sup>

## **Blood Ties (movie, 1964, directed by M. Yershov)<sup>159</sup>**

When Sergeant Vladimir Fedotov during WWII met the young beautiful Sonya on his way home from a hospital, he fell in love with her. In those difficult days when women had to do men's work, the fragile Sonya worked at a ferry (the work demanded great physical power), helping people to cross the river. She had three children. Although Vladimir's and Sonya's love affair didn't last long, he developed a deep devotion to both Sonya and her children.

When the war was over, after demobilization, Fedotov went back to Sonya. Her husband had not returned from the war, however, it was not known whether he was alive or not. Vladimir's love for Sonya was so great that he ignored the rumours that village people were spreading about Sonya that she had been spending time with 'soldiers' during the war. Finally he realized that the 'soldiers' was him, seen by several people and perceived, thus, as several men. The fact that Sonya had three children was not a barrier for their happiness. Children felt Vladimir's care and treated him as a real father in response.

Fedotov started working on a boat, and Sonya and children were always waiting on the bank for his boat to give a signal to them while passing by. Unfortunately, Sonya soon fell ill and died. Children remained with Fedotov.

After some time their real father turned up. After war he heard village people talking about Sonya that she had had relations with 'soldiers', and went to live in a town by the sea where his mother lived. He had become a lawyer, was already well-off and was proud of his achievements. He believed he did right not participating in his children's lives for such a long time. After all, they were taken care of. And he, with three kids, wouldn't be able to grow professionally. But now that the children who were already grown up wouldn't complicate his life any more, vice versa, they would make it more prestigious and he would have somebody to care for him when he would get old. So, he turned up in the village and wanted the children to go and live with him. He, who hadn't been by their side when they were hungry, went to school, were ill, etc., thought that now their life would be nicer with him, as he was better-off and could offer them more opportunities. Fedotov loved the children so much that he let them make the choice, although to remain without anybody to care for would be horrible for him.

Initially the children hesitated, but eventually the elder children refused to go with their biological father: he was a total stranger for them! The youngest boy was impressed by his biological father's presents and agreed to go with him, which the elder children perceived as betrayal. They realized that Father is not who gives you life and at some stage supports you economically, Father is the man who is by your side daily, shares your joys and difficulties, whose heart longs for you. Blood ties may be strong, but daily care means much more. Fedotov raised the children with right values, and they became his children. The younger one was still silly, but the audience is left with the impression that he would only have a look at the promised perspectives and come back soon.

There are different cases in life, and sometimes children, due to some reason raised by other people, finally make their choice in favour of blood ties, but I think that the close emotional ties that develop in a happy family day by day are stronger than blood ties. Maybe some young people realize it too late, when the mistake has been done. It's not a question of care and gratitude, it's a question of closeness which can be formed only by daily warmth.

Vladimir's role was played by Yevgeny Matveev (1922-2003). He performed a simple working and sincere man, able to love with all his heart, delicate, self-sacrificing. Sonya was performed by Vija Artmane (1929-2008), Latvian theatrical and cinema actress. She created an image of a very special, delicate woman in hard conditions who had the moral and even physical power of a man and yet had not lost her ability to love.

## **Children of Don Quixote, movie (1966, directed by Yevgeny Karelov)<sup>160</sup>**

The title of the movie contains an allusion to Miguel Cervantes's great work, so the audience is ready to meet a noble and at the same time funny man of the past. Instead, we see a contemporary family, husband, wife, and three sons, who live an ordinary life. The father, Pyotr Bondarenko (performed by Anatoly Papanov, 1922-1987, who equally brilliantly played heroic and comic roles), is an obstetrician in a maternity hospital. He is an honest and hardworking man, doing his best to raise his children in these principles. His wife, a dermatologist, sometimes blames him of being too soft with the boys – the eldest son Victor, a young artist (performed by Vladimir Korenev, 1940-2021, with his unearthly huge blue eyes), the middle one, Dima, played by Lev Prygunov (born in 1939) with his velvet voice, and the youngest – Yura, performed by Andrey Belyaninov (born in 1957, now a banker). All three have some daily problems. Victor, who has just started to work at a cinema theatre, falls in love with his director who initially doesn't perceive him seriously and only after he paints her beautiful portrait realizes how strongly he loves her. The middle one falls in love with a funny freckled girl, his mother's patient, who came to his mother in order to get rid of her freckles, but, as he by mistake gave her the wrong ointment, got even more of them. The youngest, a schoolboy, beat a neighbor boy, whose mother came to demand that he is punished, but the father protects him instead saying that Yura never beats anybody without a reason. Nothing reminds us of Don Quixote, fighting with windmills. Only by the end of the movie do we understand, why this modest man is a hero. All his children turn out to be adopted in his hospital when their light-minded mothers, due to this or that reason, left their children there, and refused to be persuaded that they are doing a horrible thing. In the end of the movie he adopts one more abandoned child. A very humane movie without any heroic pathos, even comic in some episodes. But it isn't just an entertaining comedy – it is warm, full of the great value – children should not grow up in an 'institution', unattended, there should be people like Pyotr Bondarenko, eager to open his great soul to them.<sup>161</sup>

## **Light in the window (movie, 1980, directed by A. Shakhmaliyeva)**

In this movie, Vladimir Yegorov and his wife had a teenager daughter, but they wanted very much to have a baby. Unfortunately, his wife died through child delivery. His teenage daughter, Rita, initially had very negative feeling towards her younger sister, even hates her: it is due to her that their mother died. Yegorov is desperate due to his wife's death, and even leaves the baby in hospital. But their daughter is part of her, she is the child of their love, so he loved her tenderly and realized that he had to care for her, although his mother-in-law suggested that the girl should remain in the care of the state. Step by step, Yegorov and Rita learned to look after the little girl, with the help of the health visitor, nurse Irina from the clinic who comes to care for the baby as part of her job duty. They had many sleepless nights, Rita had problems at school and Yegorov at work.

Gradually, Yegorov and Irina developed a love affair. Now Rita declared that they – her father, her sister and her – were very happy without any strangers. Yegorov obeyed the elder daughter, he tactfully didn't want to hurt her once more. But time passed, and Rita understood that they managed to look after the baby, but

her father was deeply unhappy, and eventually she herself visited Irina and begged her to come back.

What I like in the movie is that Vladimir Yegorov performed by Yuri Solomin (born in 1935) is not idealized. He was a typical representative of intelligentsia – kind, but too soft and indecisive. Yes, he was afraid of both responsibility and possible failure. Yes, he was hesitating, but his deep love for his wife eventually helped him to overcome his lack of decidedness. Yes, he felt gratitude-love to Irina, which was probably not a strong enough feeling to fight for it. It was probably easier for him to obey his decisive daughter and to surrender than to find the right words to explain to her that he still loved his late wife, and the new feeling was not betrayal, it was just the need to be alive. Luckily, Rita realized that herself, and it was eventually her merit that they all became happier.<sup>162</sup>

I have presented these five Soviet movies focused on the figures of fathers which have impressed me most. There are some more movies of the kind, but, if you ask me, their number is not enough. I believe that more work has to be done to bring to people's minds the role of fatherhood, in fiction and non-fiction books, movies, in mass media, in order that mothers don't raise their sons as 'mommy's sonnies', but as real men, responsible for their children, for children in general.

Some reviewers, unfortunately, depict them as Soviet fairy tales, Soviet propaganda, but for me, born and brought up in the USSR, these are (although to a certain degree too didactic) true life stories about common people who lived and worked with human values in their hearts. As the great UK musician Sting (born 1951) sings, "the Russians love their children too." By the way, those 'fairy tales' are truthful enough, as they also showed some women who, due to various situations in life, left their children to the care of the state and some of them later came to senses, but too late, and some never bothered about their children until they needed children to care for them. I have seen many such and even more dramatic stories in real life, some with happy endings and others not. And I greatly respect those fathers and step-fathers (from any country) who see the main happiness in caring for children.

While the Soviet movies analyzed by me are dramatic life stories, the majority of the Western movies I saw on the topic are comedies or melodramatic comedies. This makes them more entertaining and less didactic, probably eventually managing a more upbringing impact. By coincidence or not, in three of them stars Gérard Depardieu (born in 1948), who has three children from different marriages, daughter, actress Julie, daughter Roxanne and son Jean. His son's, actor Guillaume Depardieu's, health suffered from drug addiction and a motorcycle crash, later his leg had to be amputated, eventually he died of pneumonia in 2008. The topic of non-resident father may be significant and even painful for the movie star.<sup>163</sup>

## **The Comdads [In French: Les compères] (movie, 1983, directed by F.Veber)<sup>164</sup>**

Starring: Pierre Richard (born in 1934), Gérard Depardieu, (the co-fathers), Anny Duperey, and Michel Aumont. The cooperation of Pierre Richard and Gérard Depardieu is as always fantastic. Thin and awkward Richard and big and strong Depardieu are a wonderful ensemble. A teenager boy has run away from home. As his father is ineffective at finding him, his mother contacts two former lovers from around the time her son was conceived, telling



them both that the child is their son and asking them to look for him. One of them (Depardieu) is a tough journalist investigating the mafia, while the other (Richard) is a timid former teacher who was on the verge of committing suicide when he received the telephone call. Initially none of them wanted to look for the boy, but eventually the two former boyfriends together look for the boy, have a lot of adventures, and develop a feeling towards the boy. They both argue who is really the father. The boy also gets attached to them, this is why in the end he tells both (while the other is out of earshot) that his mother thinks that he is the father. Thus, the son 'adopts' both of them as his fathers, and also reconciles with his real father. All of them have learned what it means to be a caring father and a good son, and their lives have become happier. Of course, the movie is a sitcom, it is not a deep analysis of the fathers and sons problem, however, it does make the audience think on the issue.

**My Father the Hero [In French: Mon père, ce héros] (1991, movie, directed by G.Lauzier)**

Teenage Veronique, living with her divorced mother, went on holiday to Mauritius with her father. To impress a local boy, Benjamin, she told all sorts of stories about her father, presenting him as a spy, a mercenary, and even as her lover (which is a big problem, as she is under age). The silly girl, probably, lacks father's attention so much, that she almost believes the fairy tales she is inventing about him. Luckily, in the end everything is clarified, and this makes her father think about becoming not only a holiday father, but also a person who is close to his daughter and understands her better. This movie is also a sitcom, a light-minded comedy, however, it does pose a question: Is it enough for non-resident fathers to be a holiday father? How can they be closer to their children, especially teenage ones?<sup>165</sup>

**The Fugitives [In French: Les fugitifs] (1986, movie, directed by F.Veber)**

It's a lyrical / sentimental comedy. Desperate to pay the medical bills for the care of his autistic daughter, Jeanne, unemployed Francois Pignon (performed by Pierre Richard) attempts to rob a bank. When he is forced to take a hostage, Francois by chance chooses Jean Lukas (performed by Gérard Depardieu), who was recently released from prison where he was staying for bank robbery. Unsurprisingly, the police do not believe Lukas when he tells them he is not an accomplice in the robbery. As result, Lukas must now help the clumsy Pignon in order to keep them both out of jail. There are many touching episodes in the movie, when the sad and ill little Jeanne step by step gets attached to Luka. Initially all that Lukas wanted was to get rid of Pignon and his daughter, however, the helpless and confiding little girl melts Lukas's so far callous heart. Finally, when the police realizes that Lukas really didn't rob the bank and he is no longer under suspicion, he on his own initiative visits the girl in the asylum where nobody cares for her and she is in worse health than she used to be. Then he decides to kidnap Jeanne from there and help Pignon. Eventually, they cross the Swiss border together, so that the French police cannot pursue them, and the girl starts talking! The morale of the movie is: open your heart to a child, and s/he will love you unconditionally. The movie is not only unbelievably funny (as, for example, in the episode when "pregnant" Pignon gets in maternity hospital), but also very emotional (as, for example, when all girls in the asylum want to escape with Lukas). We also learn that seemingly clumsy men can become real heroes

when they want to protect their children. We learn not to judge by appearance or even the past of the person, but by their ability to act humanly. I have watched the movie several times and am ready to do it again, laughing and crying at the most emotional episodes, although I know them by heart. And I really don't know who of the girl's carers I like better, the powerful and inventive one or the seemingly good-for-nothing one.<sup>166,167</sup>

**10 Days with Dad [In French: 10 jours sans maman] (2020, movie, directed by L.Bernard)**

Antoine is the Head of HR of a big company. He is all day busy at his work and at home, too, speaks only about his job and doesn't listen to anybody except himself. He thinks that he needs a rest, while his wife doesn't, as from 9 to 4.30, when the elder children are at school, she is free to do what she wants. She asks whether he would like to be in her shoes and he mechanically, without really listening, says 'yes'. When his wife decides to go on holiday for ten days and leave him with the responsibility of their four kids, he believes it will be easy. But Antoine has underestimated the mess that it can be. He step by step learns to be a good father, and finally he manages to deal with his duties. However, he is very happy to see his wife back!

Of course, the movie is again a sitcom, however... I believe I have a good helpful husband, and we have two children, now already grown up. I don't think he would stay with them for ten days when they were kids, while I would be at vacation. He stayed with our son (together with my Dad) for five days while I was in maternity hospital with our daughter, and my son got the only cold + bronchitis + earache during his childhood. He stayed alone with our son and daughter (she was two at that moment) for two days while I was at a conference, but that was indispensable for my PhD defense. He also stayed with the children (together with my Mum) for two weeks while I was in hospital with the inflammation of facial nerve. Besides, he stayed with them, by that time 13 and 20, when I was at my 6-week summer school at the US. And that's all during years until they were both of age! Keep in mind that each case was connected with my work or illness. And my husband is rather a positive exception in my country than a regular case. So I envy French wives if their husbands (even by mistake) agree to stay with children so that she can have a rest!<sup>168</sup>

**Kramer vs. Kramer (1979, movie, directed by R.Benton)**

It's a great drama / legal drama on the topic, with the ingenious Dustin Hoffman (born in 1937) starring as Ted Kramer and beautiful Meryl Streep (born in 1949) as Joanna Kramer, his wife. The movie is American classic.

The Kramers look to be a happy family, but the husband is blind to the loneliness of his wife, to her desire also to become a 'somebody'. Ted Kramer is a workaholic advertising executive who has just been assigned a new and very important account. Ted arrives home and shares the good news with his wife only to find that she is leaving him and their son Billy, as she is tired of looking after them and wants to build up her own life and then, one day, probably, to take Billy with her. Initially, Ted and Billy are angry at one another, as Ted fails to tackle with his increased workload, and Billy misses his mother's love and attention. Everything, beginning with morning toasts, is wrong! After months of unrest, Ted and Billy learn to cope, and gradually bond as father and son.

One day, Billy accidentally falls off the jungle gym, severely cutting his face. Ted sprints several blocks through oncoming traffic carrying Billy to hospital, where he comforts his son during treatment. Fifteen months after she walked out, Joanna returns to New York from California to claim Billy, and a custody battle ensues. During the custody hearing, both Ted and Joanna are unprepared for the brutal character assassinations that their lawyers unleash on the other. The fact that Ted was fired because of his conflicting parental responsibilities, which forced him to take a lower-paying job, and Billy's accident come out in court. Joanna's present salary as a sportswear designer which she has become is much higher than his. The court awards custody to Joanna, a decision mostly based on the Tender Years doctrine. Devastated with the decision, Ted discusses appealing the case, but his lawyer warns that an appeal would be too expensive and Billy himself would have to take the stand in the resulting trial. Ted cannot bear the thought of submitting his child to such an ordeal, and decides not to contest custody.

On the morning that Billy is to move in with Joanna, the father and son share a tender hug, knowing that this is their last daily breakfast together. Unexpectedly, Joanna tells Ted how much she loves and wants Billy, but she knows that his true home is with Ted, and therefore she will not take custody of Billy.

Well, in the movie there is something I do not believe in, when I start analyzing the situation: a loving mother (to my mind) would have never left her son for an indefinite time, unless there was a horrible pressure, which in reality did not exist. But when I watch the tragico-comic brilliant performance of Dustin Hoffman, I believe everything. "As difficult as *Kramer vs. Kramer* can be to accept as a film about divorce – both from a legal standpoint and from our imbalance of sympathies for the *Kramer* – it's often exceptionally beautiful as a story about a father learning to have a real relationship with his son" (Tobias, 2019). The movie won numerous awards, among them the Oscar for best picture and the lead actor.<sup>169–171</sup>

## **Mrs. Doubtfire (1993, movie, directed by C.Columbus)**

The American melodramatic comedy which won the Oscar for Best Makeup and the Golden Globe Award for Best Motion Picture – Musical or Comedy. Robin Williams (1951-2014) was awarded the Golden Globe Award for Best Actor in a Motion Picture – Musical or Comedy.

Daniel Hillard (performed by Robin Williams) is a freelance voice actor living in San Francisco. Though a devoted father to his three children, Lydia, Chris, and Natalie, his wife Miranda considers him unreliable. One day, Daniel quits his job following a disagreement over a morally questionable script and returns home to organize a chaotic birthday party for Chris, despite Miranda's objections. This infuriates Miranda to the point where she files for divorce. At their first custody hearing, the court grants sole custody of the children to Miranda; shared custody is contingent on whether Daniel finds a steady job and a suitable residence within three months.

As Daniel works to rebuild his life, securing himself an apartment and a new job as a shipping clerk at a TV station, he learns that Miranda is seeking a housekeeper. He secretly alters her classified ad form, then calls Miranda while using his voice acting skills to pose as a series of undesirable applicants. He finally calls Miranda as Mrs. Euphemia Doubtfire, a British-accented nanny with strong credentials, taking his last name from a newspaper

headline. Miranda invites Mrs. Doubtfire for an interview. Daniel asks his brother Frank, a makeup artist, and Frank's partner to create a Mrs. Doubtfire costume, including a prosthetic mask to make him appear as an elderly woman.

Miranda hires Mrs. Doubtfire following a successful interview. The children initially struggle under Mrs. Doubtfire's authority but soon come around and thrive and Miranda learns to become closer with her children. Daniel learns several household skills as part of the role, further improving himself. However, this later creates another barrier for him to see his children, as Miranda puts more trust into Mrs. Doubtfire than him and cannot bring herself to dismiss her.

One day, the station's CEO Jonathan Lundy sees Daniel playing with toy dinosaurs on the set of a poorly-rated children's show. Impressed by his voice acting and imagination, Lundy invites Daniel for a dinner to discuss his plans for the show. Daniel discovers this is to be at the same place and time as a planned birthday dinner for Miranda by her new boyfriend, to which Mrs. Doubtfire is invited. Unable to change either appointment, Daniel changes in and out of the Mrs. Doubtfire costume to attend both events. Becoming drunk, Daniel slips up when he accidentally returns to Lundy in his costume, but he quickly claims that Mrs. Doubtfire is his idea for the new show. After overhearing that his wife's boyfriend is allergic to pepper, Daniel sneaks into the kitchen and seasons his order with powdered cayenne pepper. The boyfriend chokes on his dinner, and Daniel rescues him as Mrs. Doubtfire. The action causes the prosthetic mask to partially peel off Daniel's face, revealing his identity and horrifying Miranda.

At their next custody hearing, Daniel points out that he has met the judge's requirements, then explains his actions. The judge, noting his acting abilities, dismisses his feelings as another act, labels his role as Mrs. Doubtfire unorthodox, and grants Miranda full custody, further restricting Daniel's rights to supervised Saturday visits. Daniel is devastated. Meanwhile, Miranda and her children become miserable without Mrs. Doubtfire, acknowledging how much "she" improved their lives. They then discover that Daniel, as Mrs. Doubtfire, is hosting a new children's show called *Euphemia's House*, which becomes a nationwide hit.

Miranda visits Daniel and admits that things were better when he was involved with the family. She then arranges joint custody, allowing Daniel as himself to take the children after school. As Daniel leaves with the kids, Miranda watches an episode of *Euphemia's House* in which Mrs. Doubtfire answers a letter from a young girl, Katie McCormick, whose parents have separated, saying that no matter what arrangements families have, love will prevail.

An extremely funny and at the same time sentimental movie. If we compare Dustin Hoffman's personage to Robin Williams's one, we can see that Ted Kramer really was initially guilty in front of his wife, as, infatuated with his profession, he received her as a sort of cozy furniture in the house. His son also lacked his attention. And still, largely due to Dustin Hoffman's talent and charm, the audience takes his side, seeing how he step by step becomes a better father. On the other hand, Daniel Hillard has the audience's sympathy from the very beginning, as it is rather his capricious wife Miranda who wants a better-off life, who is guilty of their separation.

I still cannot believe that Robin Williams who was such a brilliant comic (and not only) actor and had played Doctor Patch Adams

in 'Children's Ward' (1998), teaching us to be kind and optimistic and to cure people with a smile, was suffering from severe depression before his death and committed suicide due to it.<sup>172,173</sup>

## **What a Girl Wants (2003, movie, directed by D.Gordon)**

American teenager Daphne Reynolds helps her single mother Libby work at wedding ceremonies where she watches wistfully the father-daughter dance, wishing that she knew her father, and that someday he would dance like this with her.

Therefore, she boards a plane to England to find the father she never met. Her mother told her almost nothing of him, except that they were dating, but his aristocratic relatives didn't want a common American musician girl to become part of their family, and he obeyed them. Upon arriving there she makes a startling discovery: the man she's looking for is Lord Henry Dashwood (performed by Colin Firth, born in 1960), a member of the British upper class, who is running for political office and is getting ready for marriage. He is engaged to a pretentious, snobby woman, Glynnis, and has an equally pretentious, snobby step-daughter-to-be.

Lord Henry didn't know Daphne existed, but he welcomes her into his life. On the other hand, Glynnis and her daughter do everything to get rid of her. Lord Henry's family (except his mother) and his current betrothed look on Daphne disapprovingly. Henry confesses to his daughter that he and Libby were once married in a questionable tribal ceremony in Morocco, but that she mysteriously left him soon thereafter when they returned to England. A flashback shows a younger version of Henry's assistant who has political ambitions, convincing Libby that her marriage to Henry will not work. Henry opens his heart to Daphne, recollects how free he was when he was young, and behaves shockingly for his environment. The grown-up daughter teaches her father to be natural and emotional. Children, especially teenagers, can teach us a lot, if only we care for them.

It's a Cinderella-like fairy tale, comedy, in which a common girl learns not only manners, but also to respect herself. Much of the humor rests on the British-American differences and, of course, it's the Americans that win. It touches the English (proper behavior in civilized society) and American (being oneself) ideals, but basically it is about the man's duty to care about the ones he loves, whatever his social responsibilities are.

Of course, the well-off life impresses Daphne, but doesn't corrupt her – all she wants is father's love, she has come for it, and she finally gains it. However, a gilded cage is not for her, so she returns to America, continues with her education – and father recognizes her (American) freedom, and as the apology for the misunderstanding between them, he visits her in the US and brings with him her newly gained friend, Yan Wallace, who is a metizo, as he calls himself, a son of an aristocratic mother who prefers to be a street musician and wedding singer.

Critics call it teenage girls' movie, well, right, it's entertaining, sort of silly, beautiful, and luxurious, and not too deep – but it isn't meant to be deep, so there is no reason to blame it for the lack of depth. However, the deeper audience will see the strength of girls' desire that their fathers care more for them and their mothers.<sup>174–176</sup>

The literary masterpieces and the movies of different artistic value I retold and tried to analyze in this chapter are not of equal artistic

value. Please do not blame me for that, as all I wanted was to find human stories to your taste, sophisticated and simple, tragic, dramatic and/or funny, which deal with fathers and children, their need of each other, the way they can / should care about each other and make each other more humane.

## **Chapter 4: Fathers who ruined / complicated their children's lives a lot**

Kiryanova (2019) writes that, although traditionally we want / expect children to have fathers, there are such fathers that probably it would be better not to have them. It is true, some fathers do complicate their children's lives a lot, however, at least in the past, it was both economically and socially / morally too difficult for a mother to raise children alone. Among the stories discussed below you will see monster fathers whom it would really be better not to have and too demanding fathers who had a contradictory impact on their children. It is not a simple issue. Not by chance, many children of such too strict fathers eventually justified them and were even grateful to them. Besides, it is impossible to view the past at the angle of today's norms and possibilities. We may dislike the traditional practices of children's corporal punishment, but we cannot take to court the cases of half a century ago which at that moment were viewed as normal. I personally am against violence, a century ago or nowadays, but I would not view the education systems of the past as only ruinous, just based on its application. This way or that way, today a person taking the responsibility for his/her children, should avoid treating them in a way harmful to them (even if he believes it to be profitable).

### **Ivan the Terrible (in Russian: Ivan Grozny, Ivan IV, 1530-1584)**

According to the Encyclopedia Britannica (Andreyev, 2021), he was the "grand prince of Moscow and the first to be proclaimed tsar of Russia (from 1547). His reign saw the completion of the construction of a centrally administered Russian state and the creation of an empire that included non-Slav states. Ivan engaged in prolonged and largely unsuccessful wars against Sweden and Poland, and, in seeking to impose military discipline and a centralized administration, he instituted a reign of terror against the hereditary nobility".<sup>177–178</sup>

Besides causing horror to his enemies inside and beyond the country, he was greatly feared by his own family. What was the reason and how was it expressed? He orphaned at the age of eight, and his life became very difficult. Ivan took his anger and resentment out on animals, pulling the feathers out of live birds and throwing dogs and cats out of windows. Full power was transferred to Ivan on his sixteenth birthday. The construction of St. Basil's Cathedral followed his conquest of Kazan. There is a story that persists to this day that Ivan was so impressed by the finished cathedral that he had the architect blinded so that the latter could never produce anything so beautiful again. There is, however, no evidence that the blinding ever took place. After his first wife died and his best friend betrayed him, his character changed a lot. Anyone Ivan suspected of disloyalty was tortured and horribly put to death. Favourite execution methods included boiling alive, impalement, being roasted over an open fire or being torn limb from limb by horses. According to Perry,<sup>179</sup> as Ivan aged, his mental health deteriorated even further. One of the last brutal acts of his reign occurred in 1581, when, upon encountering his heavily pregnant daughter-in-law in a state of undress, he beat her



so severely that she miscarried. On hearing the news of the loss of his unborn child, Ivan's second son confronted his father. Ivan, who always carried a sharpened baton around which he used to beat anyone who displeased him, hit his son over the head so hard that he collapsed and died several days later. Nobody, not even his own family, was safe from Ivan the Terrible.

Based on the legend, the Russian realist painter Ilya Repin between 1883 and 1885 created 'Ivan the Terrible and His Son Ivan'. In the painting, the grief-stricken Tsar of Russia Ivan the Terrible cradles his dying son, the Tsarevich Ivan Ivanovich, to whose head he had just struck a fatal blow in a fit of anger. The majority of people who know the story nowadays know it from this painting.

However, some historians<sup>180</sup> believe that this fact is a myth like the story dealing with the architect of Kazan Cathedral. First the story of Ivan Jr. murder was publicized by the Jesuit monk Antonio Possevino whose mission to Russia failed, so he had reasons to exaggerate and distort what he saw (Russian sources did not mention the event). In 1963, when Archangels' Cathedral of the Moscow Kremlin was being renovated, they opened the coffins of both Ivan the Terrible and his son. The son's skull was in such a state by the time that nothing could be understood about the reasons of his death. But, what is interesting, in his, as well as in his father's bones too much mercury and arsenic were discovered, which possibly indicates that he was poisoned. On the other hand, mercury and arsenic were used in medications of the time, and Ivan Jr. had weak health, so, probably, the father's extreme cruelty and anger, as well as the son's early death, may be explained by mistakes of medicine of their time.<sup>178-180</sup>

Monster fathers and step-fathers are reflected in fiction literature, and the impact of reading about these fictitious characters is especially emotional. The books, sometimes more efficiently than courts, can teach people how fathers should not behave. One of such fictitious figures is Pap Finn from Mark Twain's "Adventures of Huckleberry Finn".<sup>181</sup> Huckleberry Finn or just Huck is Tom Sawyer's best friend. However, while Tom, being an orphan, is still from a respected family and cared for by his aunt Polly, Huck is an uneducated, barefoot, superstitious boy with bad manners but golden heart, the son of the town drunkard who often leaved the boy without any care, which is even better, as his "care" means shouting and beating. This is what Huck says about his father in chapter III: Pap he hadn't been seen for more than a year, and that was comfortable for me; I didn't want to see him no more. He used to always whale me when he was sober and could get his hands on me; though I used to take to the woods most of the time when he was around.<sup>181</sup>

Huck is thirteen years old when the novel begins. He is in the midst of being 'civilized' by the Widow Douglas, which he couldn't tolerate for a long time. His father, who was thought to have drowned, turns up. And this is his greeting to his son: You've put on considerable many frills since I been away. I'll take you down a peg before I get done with you. You're educated, too, they say—can read and write. You think you're better'n your father, now, don't you, because he can't? I'll take it out of you. Who told you you might meddle with such hifalut'n foolishness, hey?—who told you you could?<sup>181</sup>

A kind, loving father, who is angry that his son learned to read and write! As Huck lives in a family now, his father wants his son to get money for him in some way, by begging, borrowing

or stealing. He needs the money to buy himself a drink. Huck continues his story in chapter 6: He caught me a couple of times and thrashed me, but I went to school just the same, and dodged him or outrun him most of the time. I didn't want to go to school much before, but I reckoned I'd go now to spite pap.<sup>181</sup>

So, Huck escapes from his abusive father with a runaway slave, Jim. Jim is as illiterate as Huck, but eventually he becomes a truly fatherly figure for Huck. They understand each other well, as both of them want freedom and both have common sense.

Another example, of a step-father, is Humbert Humbert from Nabokov's "Lolita." Humbert Humbert is the narrator's (fictitious writer's) pen-name. We do not know his real name. He told his story. In his young days Humbert Humbert loved a girl called Annabel who died and for years he was unable to fall in love (he did have some unimportant for him relations with women). The allusion of Annabel Lee is so transparent (words from Poe's poem are used) that it made me think that probably the girl was also a fruit of Humbert Humbert's fantasy. Since then only *nymphets* interested him. Humbert Humbert (or Nabokov, as it is him who introduced the term) wrote: Between the age limits of nine and fourteen there occur maidens who, to certain bewitched travelers, twice or many times older than they, reveal their true nature which is not human, but nymphic (that is, demoniac); and these chosen creatures I propose to designate as "nymphets"<sup>182</sup>

He came to the small town of Ramsdale seeking accommodation. He finally chose the residence of Mrs. Charlotte Haze, a widow, as he at first sight got infatuated with Charlotte's teenage daughter, Dolores. As the readers (and the critics) see all further events through the eyes of Humbert Humbert, it is difficult to judge whether Lolita, as he nicknamed Dolores, was really that seducing or it was totally his ill fantasy.

Charlotte, who was a widow, thought he might be a good match for her and, in fact, made him marry her, which he did hoping to be in this way closer to Lolita. In his diary Humbert Humbert described his desires. When Charlotte by chance discovered the diary, she was, first of all, offended as a woman who discovered she had only been a tool to get closer to her daughter, and only second, worried about her daughter. She wrote letters to her friends to warn them about the dangerous man and decided to escape from him together with her daughter, however, she died in a car accident.

Dolly (this is how they called Dolores at school) was at summer camp when this happened. Humbert Humbert, as the girl's step-father became Lolita's guardian. He called the camp saying that her mother was hospitalized, and hid from the girl she was already dead. He took the girl to a trip across the country, telling her they were waiting for her mother's recovery. It was the girl who – according to Humbert Humbert – first said they were lovers. It was a funny game for her. To hide their real relationship, they never stayed a long time in one place.

One might say he never treated to girl rudely, he was careful not to frighten her, as he wanted her to be with him. However, please agree with me, this 'tenderness' with a girl-child is beyond any norms of morality.

As Lolita finally got fed up and ran away from him, it is also difficult to say whether in reality she had any feelings towards him or these feelings were also his fantasies. Maybe she was too silly to realize what was happening or she was really so spoilt, however, even

if Lolita truly was as provoking as Humbert Humbert presented it, he, being an adult person, should have controlled his sexual desires, both from legal and moral viewpoint. Teach your children to be careful about the people who are too sweet with them, they might want something horrible. People who are against sexual education at schools forget that not all parents are able to explain things to their children, to protect them, on the one hand, and not to frighten them too much, on the other.

Within the framework of this book, I do not undertake to judge the literary merits of Nabokov's novel, which is considered a literary masterpiece, I only consider the plot and the situation, perhaps, differently than its author. Most likely, Nabokov did not set out to warn teenage girls and their parents about the possible dangers, but for me the value of this novel is precisely in drawing public attention to the pitfalls of early sexuality.<sup>183</sup>

The father of the great Russian writer Fyodor Dostoyevsky (1821-1881), Mikhail Dostoyevsky (1788-1839), came from a family of Lithuanian gentry who later lost their privileges. He served as a doctor during the war of 1812. After the war he started working at Moscow Mariinskaya bolnitsa (hospital) for the poor. He worked hard and was demanding to colleagues. He had a "heavy" character – was arrogant and stingy, often had conflicts with people and outbursts of anger, so Fyodor did not have an easy childhood. They lived in a dark and humid wing of the hospital building. For loyal service Mikhail Dostoyevsky re-obtained the title of nobility, which led to purchasing a small house ('mansion'), not much better than their previous habitat. The house later burnt in a fire. The father sent Fyodor and his brother Mikhail for education in a boarding house with a French tutor. They moved from one of boarding schools to another, in one of the schools teachers happened to be outstanding, which contributed to the future writer's ability and desire to write. His soft, smiling and loving mother adored her tyrant husband, who tortured her by unreasonable jealousy, so she developed consumption (tuberculosis) of which she eventually died. Although the brothers were dreaming of literary career, the father took the two elder sons to Petersburg to study at an engineering school, as the profession of engineer would guarantee them being financially well-off, while he remained in their estate with younger children, drinking heavily. He punished his serfs cruelly, so, when he was found dead, investigation came to conclusion that he was murdered by two of them, however, the official decision tried to avoid the 'unpleasant' sides of the event. Although his father was too strict to him and turned his mother's life into a torture, Fyodor Dostoyevsky was very upset by his father's horrible death. For many years he did not reveal his real feelings, until he wrote his great novel *Karamazov Brothers*<sup>184</sup> where Fyodor Karamazov is unkind to his children, stingy, heavily drinking, and was killed by – as it finally turns out – by his illegitimate son. Paradoxically, we can see that even an authoritarian but caring (in his understanding) about his children's future father can lead to valuable life experience and predetermine their success (if, of course, the children are resilient and live by the principle 'what doesn't kill us, makes us stronger').<sup>185,186</sup>

The grandfather of the great Russian writer and playwright Anton Pavlovich Chekhov (1860-1904) was Yegor Chekh, a serf, however, not a regular one, but an estate manager. His dream was to become a free man, so he gathered money to redeem himself, his wife and two sons, but he didn't have enough money to pay for

his daughter's freedom. Luckily, the landowner set her free, too. The man was talented, a good organizer and a hardworking man, however, he had fits of uncontrollable anger, of which his inferiors were very much afraid. The future writer's father Pavel Chekhov (1825-1898) inherited his father's talents, dreaminess, and love for ecclesial music. He could play the violin. He started as a shop clerk, but then was able to open his own shop, which he in a high-flown way called a 'commercial enterprise'. His sons, including Anton, who was his third child, had to work there almost all day long, from 5 o'clock in the morning, before and after school. Chekhov attended the Greek School in Taganrog and the Taganrog Gymnasium (afterwards renamed the Chekhov Gymnasium). He, together with two brothers, also sang at the Greek Orthodox monastery in Taganrog and in his father's choirs. If they had to sing Matins on a big holiday, he woke the children at 2 and 3 in the morning and, regardless of any weather, led them to the church. Sundays and holidays for the children of Pavel Chekhov were just as busy days as their weekdays. While the listeners were touched by the boys' tender voices, for Anton it was a torture: he didn't have a good musical ear, besides, he was a physically weak boy with a weak voice. His father cruelly punished them for least guilt, he flogged them mercilessly. As he dedicated too much time to his fads at the expense of his business, he soon went bankrupt, and had to run away to Moscow secretly, to escape his creditors. Anton, at the age of 16, had to stay in Taganrog alone and earned living by giving private lessons to little children.

Although Anton Chekhov blamed his father for his kind-hearted mother's ruined life (she had to tolerate his rudeness and tried to protect children against it), he still was attached to his despotic father. He valued and inherited his father's pedantic accuracy and responsibility, his self-discipline was the result of his father's 'upbringing' (unfortunately, typical enough at that time in Russian middleclass). Anton was surprised to find out that one of his classmates, from gentry, was never beaten in the family. His father had his sons taught some craft, to provide their future. Anton was taught to be a tailor. Pavel Chekhov hired French and music teachers for his children and wanted them to be educated, as he realized that education was the only way up on the social ladder. Anton Chekhov was educated and worked for a certain period as a doctor. Anton Pavlovich spoke about himself and about his brothers and sister: "The talent in us comes from the side of the father, and the soul from the side of the mother."<sup>188</sup>

The three Dumas (general Thomas-Alexandre Dumas and writers Alexandre Dumas-père, and Alexandre Dumas-fils) were already discussed in this book. However, they might have remained slaves unless their, consequently, father/grandfather/great grandfather, **Alexandre Antoine Davis de la Pailleterie** (1710-1786) bought back his son (who was his and his black slave's child) from slavery. Before leaving for France, he had financial problems, so he sold his four children (who officially were his slaves at the same time), on condition that he would be able to buy his son Alexandre back at the same price. He loved the boy, so he did do after four years (thanks to him on behalf of the whole humanity!), however, he never bought back the other three children. Good father, nothing to say!<sup>189,15</sup>

Niccolò Paganini's (1782-1840) father **Antonio Paganini** was a dockworker and day laborer, who also made some money by playing the mandolin. When he discovered the musical talent of his son, he was glad that he would be able to make some

money on it. The boy had to keep the violin in his hand from early morning to late at night. The father left the boy with no food when he thought the boy did not work hard enough, while there was no need for it: the boy, anyway, was very enthusiastic about music. Due to working 15 hours a day, Niccolò's health began to deteriorate. Antonio was a gambler and often lost the last penny he made. He never showed a liking to his son – the boy was just an instrument to make money for him. Niccolò was not very good looking, so his father called him a monkey. He was cruelly beating the boy and requiring that he worked more and more.<sup>190</sup> After his father could teach him nothing, he was sent alone at the age of 12 to study in Genoa. By the age of 16 he even developed the habit of drinking, like his father!<sup>191</sup>

**Karl Pavlovich Bryullov** (original name **Charles Brulleau**, 1799 – 1952) was an outstanding Russian portrait, landscape and history painter. His best-known painting is “The Last Day of Pompeii”. His grandfather was from French Huguenots, a painter, and his father was a sculptor. From early childhood Karl was good at drawing and painting. He had weak health and most of his childhood spent in bed. However, his strict and demanding father, Pavel Bryullov, required from him to paint as much as his healthier sibling did. If Karl couldn't finish the given task, he wouldn't be admitted to breakfast or dinner. Once, his father got so angry that he struck the boy on his ear so strongly that Karl remained deaf for the rest of his life. On the other hand, his father was his first arts teacher who noticed and developed his talent. It helped Karl to be admitted to the Academy of Arts at the age of 10, with a state scholarship, and later to become a renowned painter.<sup>192, 193</sup>

Jaroslav Hašek (1883-1923) was a Czech writer best known for his satirical book “Dobrý voják Švejk a jiné podivné history” (In Czech: “The Good Soldier Schweik and other stories”) dealing with WWI. He was the son of a middle-school math teacher Josef Hašek who had three children. Jaroslav's father was an alcoholic, and he often had to seek for his father, deadly drunk, in taverns. Their family often moved from one place to another, as Joseph often lost his job, so Jaroslav never knew a real home.<sup>194, 195</sup>

**Carl Olof Larsson** (1853-1919) was a Swedish artist, famous for the cheerful watercolor paintings depicting the life of his family. “Home under the sun” or “House of the sun” was the title of an autobiography of the artist, released 12 years after his death. A house illuminated by sunshine, children's laughter, the smell of pie, the whole family talking at tea – these never happened in Carl Larsson's childhood. His family lived in the slums. Father was a laborer and often drank alcohol, so Carl was afraid to make him angry. “I curse the day you were born!” – these drunken cries Carl remembered for a long time. He called his house “Hell on Earth.” In adulthood he did his best to create a house with everything he missed so much in his childhood.<sup>196</sup>

The Soviet leader Joseph Stalin,<sup>197</sup> notorious for his cruelty and authoritarian rule, refused to exchange his elder son of the first marriage who was captured by fascists for a German general, saying he doesn't exchange soldiers for generals, and his son died. He did love his children from the second marriage – son Vasiliy and daughter Svetlana, even spoiled them, however, he tried to stop Vasiliy from marrying a woman he loved, interfered into Svetlana's personal life. Eventually, all his children were his victims. After their father's death Vasiliy took to drinking and was exiled to Kazan where he eventually died, while Svetlana left the

country on the pretext of marrying a foreigner. Another Soviet leader's, Leonid Brezhnev's daughter Galina was also spoiled by the fact that she was the General Secretary's daughter, however, her father, too, interfered into her private life, she took to drinking and died in misery.<sup>198</sup>

The famous American pediatrician Dr. Benjamin Spock (1903-1998), whose book *Baby and Child Care* was the desk book of millions of young mommies in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, had two sons, Michael and John. In his book Dr. Spock criticized the rigid pediatric doctrines of his day and encouraged the flexibility of feeding the babies and close emotional links between the baby and the parents.<sup>199</sup> However, his sons later told that for weeks they did not see their too busy with his work father, due to which, in their adult life, they minimized the relationships with him and even didn't turn up on when he was dying. “The charges in the 1960s that Spock was an advocate of permissiveness, who ruined an entire generation, were laughable to the doctor's two sons: Mike (born in 1933) and John (born in 1944). They knew him as a strict, critical, remote and unapproachable father”.<sup>200</sup>

Somebody might think that unworthy fathers were typical only of the past. Unfortunately, not. Nowadays such (and even worse) monsters exist, too. A quite recently discussed in the media case:<sup>201</sup> Sarah Mo admitted she was first abused by her father when she was six. After more than 40 years she dared to speak about it publicly, even without making it anonymous. She explained she did so because such men should understand that their abnormal treatment of their children will not remain unpunished.

She used to be “daddy's girl”, and he caressed her all the time. The abuse started with touching her intimate parts of the body in the bath. He invited her “to play with him.” The abuse, she claimed, became even more humiliating when she went through puberty. Eventually, he raped her. She was able to confront her father when she was 14 or 15, after which he ignored her existence in the family. But she dared to address the police for help only when she was grown up and had her own daughter. The court was a closed one. Her father was sentenced to 11 years in prison after pleading guilty to eight child sex offences against his daughter, including one count of rape. Only now did a 52-year-old woman dare to speak out on the case in order to contribute to stopping family violence. The article runs that “in the year to June, 61,158 rapes were recorded, but survivors are waiting longer for trials and the number of cases making it to court has fallen dramatically in recent years.” This reveals that many old cases were recently disclosed, but their decreasing number points at the impact of court decisions against the rapists.

Another example. Nikole from Sydney was sexually abused by her father.<sup>202</sup> She lived in a seemingly happy family of father, mother, her and two brothers. The father was drinking and when drunk abused the girl. Initially she didn't understand what was happening. When her mother learned about it, she kicked him out of the house. However, Nikole's mother died when she was 9, she had to live with her dad, and the assaults continued. Only when she was 18, could she address the police. He was arrested and hit with five charges, including sexual intercourse with person under the age of 10 years, and indecent assault person under 16 years of age. The Australian Bureau of Statistics data cited in the article from 2005 to 2021, which estimates that 15 per cent - or up to 20 per cent for females - of the population will suffer familial child sexual abuse.



Although monster-fathers have never been a norm, the cases are relatively spread, so, if in the past it was a shame to speak on the issues and many of them remained unknown, in the contemporary world much can and has to be done to control such cases legally, as well as to explain the rights to the children and the responsibilities to the parents.

## Chapter 5: Some interesting facts, traditions & regulations dealing with fatherhood

On July 5, 1908, a West Virginia church sponsored the nation's first event explicitly in honor of fathers, a Sunday sermon in memory of the 362 men who had died in the previous December's explosions at the Fairmont Coal Company mines in Monongah, but it was a one-time commemoration and not an annual holiday.

The nation's first Father's Day was celebrated on June 19, 1910, in the state of Washington. However, it was not until 1972 - 58 years after President Woodrow Wilson made Mother's Day official - that the day honoring fathers became a nationwide holiday in the United States. Today, the day honoring fathers is celebrated in the United States on the third Sunday of June.<sup>203</sup>

Father's Day is a holiday of honoring fatherhood and paternal bonds, as well as the influence of fathers in society. In Catholic countries of Europe, it has been celebrated on 19 March as Saint Joseph's Day since the Middle Ages. The day is held on various dates across the world, and different regions maintain their own traditions of honoring fatherhood.

Father's Day is a recognized public holiday in Lithuania (Lietuva) and some parts of Spain and was regarded as such in Italy until 1977. It is a national holiday in Estonia and Samoa.<sup>204</sup>

In order to achieve a more equal division of childcare, housework and employment between mothers and fathers, several countries introduced father quotas for parental leave, e.g., Norway, Sweden, Iceland, Germany and France. These quotas or daddy months are intended to incentivize fathers to take leave and to engage more in childcare and housework.

Sweden is consistently ranked as one of the best countries in the world on this measure. After the birth of a child, both parents are eligible for a total of 240 days' leave. Although the family makes the decision who will take what part of the leave, minimum 90 days has to be taken by the father. According to a report in the Nordic Labour Journal,<sup>205</sup> mothers often take the majority of that flexible leave. There seem to be two reasons for this: traditional gender dynamics within couples, and corporate expectations in which workplaces pressure fathers to take only those weeks specifically allotted to them. So while family-friendly policies make Sweden stand out, they do not guarantee a more progressive view of a woman's place in society.<sup>206,207</sup>

In the UK the father can take either Paternity Pay or one or two week's paid Paternity Leave because his partner is having a baby, adopting a child or having a baby through a surrogacy arrangement. On Paternity leave he receives 90 percent of average weekly salary. To be eligible for the leave, he must have worked continuously at his workplace for at least 26 weeks by the end of the 'qualifying week' - the 15th week before the baby is due. If the child's mother is taking maternity leave or getting maternity

pay or maternity allowance, father may be able to share up to 50 weeks of leave and 37 weeks of pay. This is great option if they both want to share the responsibility of caring for their baby in the first year after it is born.<sup>208</sup>

In 2007 Germany introduced a new system of paid parental leave. This reform applied to all parents of children born on 1st of January 2007 or later and introduced a father quota. Overall, families were eligible to 14 months of paid parental leave out of which two months were reserved for the father and two months for the mother. The family would lose the two daddy months if the father did not use them. Paid leave had to be taken during the first 14 months after childbirth and parents might take leave consecutively or in parallel. While on parental leave parents receive benefits replacing 67% of pre-childbirth net labor earning. Administrative data reveal that the reform considerably increased the share of fathers taking parental leave.<sup>208,209</sup>

Since 1 January 2017, eligible working fathers in Singapore, including those who are self-employed, have been entitled to 2 weeks of paid paternity leave funded by the Government. This will happen if the father is or was legally married to the child's mother between conception and birth, has served his employer for a continuous period of at least 3 months before the birth of the child, and the child is a Singapore citizen.<sup>210</sup>

Fathers' rights groups began in Australia in the 1970s with the founding of organizations such as the Lone Fathers Association. Other well-known groups include Equality for Fathers, Dads Against Discrimination, Fathers Without Rights, The Men's Confraternity and the Shared Parenting Council. On May 22, 2006, Australia passed the "Family Law Amendment (Shared Parental Responsibility) Act 2006" making both parents responsible for decisions about their child through the concept of 'equal shared parental responsibility'.<sup>208, 211</sup>

'Parental responsibility' covers, among other things, rights and obligations in connection with taking care of the child's physical person and property and includes questions relating to custody of the child, where the child lives, contact with the child and guardianship. In all EU countries, a mother automatically has parental responsibility for her child, as does a married father. In most cases, parents exercise this responsibility jointly. The rules on whether an unmarried father has these rights and duties differ depending on the country. If the parents get divorced, the joint custody continues without the court's needing to take any decision on this in connection with the divorce. If either of the parents wants a change in the custody, they must apply for the joint custody to be dissolved.<sup>206</sup>

Fathers have rights, just as mothers have rights. Each parent has parental responsibility for each of their child/children until aged 18 years, unless a court orders otherwise. Parental responsibility is not affected by changes in the parents' relationship; for example, if you separate or remarry. Where possible, children should have a relationship with each parent and other important people in their lives.

In Australia, for example, the law does not look at whose fault it is that the relationship broke down. The court's main concern is what is best for the children, and to ensure that they are protected from physical or psychological harm. There is no rule that sets out where the children should live and how much time the children should spend with each parent. Each family is different.<sup>211</sup>

If a child's parents divorce, and one of them is a foreign citizen, there are no international guidelines about awarding custody. While custody doesn't benefit from worldwide rules, there are international laws related to abduction. A foreign parent cannot legally take a child to live in a foreign country. Nations have agreed that a child should be returned to their country of primary residence if one parent takes them outside their home country. Nations will cooperate to restore a custody arrangement when a foreign spouse violates the agreement.<sup>211, 212</sup>

Little children's health and morals need protection. That is why the majority of civilized nations have prohibitions on sexual acts for children under 13/16/18, depending on the country, its traditions and religion, even if the child entered the sexual relations willingly (both this and the opposite is difficult to prove). However, article 8 in the European Convention on Human Rights includes the right for sexual life, so the criminalisation of sexual activity based on bilateral agreement seems to some people as violation of these rights.<sup>213, 214</sup>

Therefore, there are some very young not only mothers, but also fathers. In 1910 a case was registered in China when a boy of nine had relations with a girl of eight. They had four children together, two sons and two daughters. No more information on the couple has reached our times. In 2012 in Auckland, New Zealand a boy of 11 was seduced by his classmate's mother who forced him to have intercourse until she became pregnant. Later the boy told about it to his school principal who, in turn, informed the police, and the woman was arrested. Glenn Stearns from the United States had a daughter from a 17-year-old girl named Kathy when he was just 14-years old. The daughter works for her father today.<sup>215</sup>

Of course, the majority of such facts end in abandoned children or (if lucky) children adopted and raised by grandparents. Being physically able to have a child does not mean being ready to take the responsibility for him / her. Few of such babies are raised by the teenage mother, still fewer – with participation of the teenage father. Even if the baby is lucky to live with both, teenage parents are deprived of childhood. Children definitely need to be explained morals first of all, then legislation and finally where babies come from and how to avoid undesirable parenthood.

In 2012 Ramjit Raghav from India (born in 1916), who is believed to be the oldest in the world father, had his second child at the age of 96. His wife was 52 (60, according to another source) then. His first son was born in 2010 when he was 94. Ramjit had been a vegetarian all his life which, as he claimed, helped him to preserve his health. It did not make him happy, as his elder son was kidnapped in 2013, and soon his wife left him, taking with her their younger son. He felt very lonely and died at the age of 104 as a result of a fire, as he was smoking in bed (Mills, 2020). I believe, people should not have children at any age just because they have such a biological possibility. They need to be able to take care of their children and think of their future.<sup>216</sup>

Genghis Khan (1158/62 – 1227), the founder and first Great Khan of the huge and powerful Mongol Empire, was said to have thousands of children. A Moroccan sultan Ismail Ibn Sharif (1645-1727) was believed to father 888 children.<sup>217</sup> It is clear why they needed to conquer so many lands – to provide inheritance for at least the legally recognized children. Jokes away, it was the numerous mothers and nannies who were involved in caring for these children. Helping children to come to the world is

sometimes very noble, of course, like in the case of Bertold P. Wiesner (1902-1972) who kept a fertility clinic in London in the 1940s-60s, donated his sperm in order that about 600 children were born (totally in his clinic about 1,500 children were born).<sup>218</sup> To me, anonymous sperm donation might be very problematic, as in the future the siblings may not know that they are related to each other and enter in incest relationships, which may result in genetic illnesses of their children. The children should have the right to know who their biological father was.

As for ordinary people, it was normal for our grandfathers to have 10-15 kids, some of whom died in infancy, some of them had children in quite solid age. Nowadays, it's sort of fashionable among actors and other public and well-off men to have children from young wives in their 60s, 70s and 80s. However, fatherhood is not only about biology and finances. It is very difficult to imagine how it is possible to care for so many children – communicate with them, support them when needed, work and enjoy life together. One needs sufficient time and a huge soul for that. And it is very desirable that children do not become (maybe rich) orphans in their childhood or teens.

## Chapter 6: My father

It is so difficult to choose where to start. Let me first provide some biographic data. My father was born in 1931 in Georgia. When he was in the 8<sup>th</sup> grade, his father (my grandfather) got a high position in Moscow, so the family moved there, except his sister (my aunt) who at that moment was in her last year of school. He was a good student in Tbilisi, and did well in Moscow, too, however, initially he had great problems with the Russian language. His school teacher recommended to my grandfather to hire him a private teacher of Russian, which he told my father. My father said he could deal with his problems himself – he just needed some time. My grandpa trusted him, and in a few months the situation improved. By the end of the school the problem was practically solved (he got a “B” in Russian in his school certificate). He graduated from Moscow Engineering Physics Institute and worked in Moscow Electrochemistry Institute of the Academy of Sciences, delivered lectures at Moscow State University. He defended his Doctor of Physical-Mathematical Science dissertation in 1966 and became a Professor in 1972. In 1978 he returned to Tbilisi and started working at Inorganic Chemistry and Electrochemistry Research Institute where he founded a department of theoretical research, which he headed till the end of his life. From 1982 he also was the head of department of General and Theoretical Physics in Georgian Polytechnic Institute (now Georgian Technical University). He published about 200 articles (more than 50 of them in international journals) and 10 monographs. Starting with 1975 he was the Chair of Electrochemical Physics department of the International Society of Electrochemistry. He lived only 54 years. Fact-Archive Encyclopedia wrote: “The scientific school of Quantum Electrochemistry was founded in the 1960s by Revaz Dogonadze and others. Quantum Electrochemistry is a new scientific direction of Theoretical Physical Chemistry on Quantum Mechanical aspects of Electrochemistry. Works of Dogonadze constitute also a considerable part of the new science that lies at the border of Electrochemistry and Physics, i.e., Electrochemical Physics”. Many of his students are now internationally recognized scientists.<sup>219, 220</sup>

The earliest thing that is related with my and Dad's relations is when I was 4-5 years old. I do not remember the fact myself, but

I was often told it by different family members. We were having a rest in the Crimea. My father was learning scuba diving. To go under water, he took a couple of heavy stones. I watched him disappearing and suddenly started crying: "Dad, don't go away! I still need you!" Whoever retold the episode to me laughed at a little child's egotism. But how could they understand my despair at the idea that my father would no longer be by my side! He was The Strong Man, the guarantee of my safety! Nothing to laugh at! Please do not frighten your children in this way, explain to them what is going to happen.

My own vague memories go to the age of 5-6, and Father taking me in winter in a sleigh for a ride in the nearby alley. It was such fun! I felt a queen at that moment.

I wasn't a very healthy child and was often ill. As my mother had to work a full day 6 days a week while my father had a luxury of the weekly "library day" and a flexible work schedule on other days, he often stayed at home when I was ill. He either entertained me by picking tunes on the piano (he didn't have any musical education, but had a good ear for music) or by reading books to me. We had two favourite books – *The Twelve Chairs* and *The Little Golden Calf* by Ilya Ilf and Yevgeny Pertov. We also liked O. Henry's short stories and some sea adventures, such as *The Treasure Island* by Robert Louis Stevenson. The emotions of these books took me to another, wonderful world, I forgot about the throat ache and the temperature and even sort of enjoyed staying with dad at home instead of going to kindergarten and later to school. I hated kindergarten and the first three years at school with (as it turned out later) medically crazy teacher who all the time shouted at children. As soon as it was discovered, I was taken to another school, and since then I was fond of school and schooling, however, Father's readings were even more admirable. He read the dialogues in roles, very impressively, laughing with me at jokes.

My grandpa worked in Sukhumi, and I spent every summer for six years there. Father usually took me there by airplane. With him I was not afraid of flying. I looked into the window and imagined that fluffy clouds were islands. He spend a couple of days there, then went back to work. And then, by the end of my stay there, he and Mom came and stayed there. We visited so many places at the seaside. I still remember well our trip to the lake Ritsa. The wavy road in the mountains, the crystal river running along the road, then a rivulet with bluish-greenish water, a tiny, but deep lake with freezing water and no bottom visible, and finally, the Ritza – a beautiful lake among the mountains! Its water seemed so attractive, but too cold not only to swim, but even to keep your hand in it for more than a minute. We visited Gagra, with the beach with pine-trees, Eshera, with a restaurant in a cave, many other wonderful places. I was never bored, even when we were silent. Looking at nature, having your Dad at your side, climbing the rocks with him, it was so exciting!

He was a good driver, and explained all road signs to me. He taught me driving, but it didn't really work out – I didn't have the eye gauge and couldn't decide how far was the other car, so I was afraid of having accidents. I only liked "driving" when sitting in Dad's lap, so that I was only keeping the wheel, and he was controlling the situation. It was Dad who taught me swim. The first two years I was just splashing along the shore with my inflatable safety belt. I would swim some 7-10 meters without it, but then I "got tired" and stood on my feet. Then Father told me:

"In this way you will never learn real swimming. Do you trust me?" I nodded my head. "So let's swim away from the shore, as long as you have any power left. When totally exhausted, put your hands on my shoulders, but lightly, don't drown us both! Lie on the water, relaxed, like in bed, and splash a little your legs. I'll tow you back to the shore." Next day we swam 50 meters, then a hundred meters, then I swam back myself by his side, knowing that if I feel tired, he is there to tow me safely. So many years have passed, I am not a fast swimmer, but I am not afraid of water and can stay in water for a whole hour without getting tired or frightened. It was my cousin, however, who taught me deal with waves, look at the wave and decide whether I can jump up with it or it is too tall, if too tall, then, when it approaches near enough, dive under it, and it cannot harm you. I am generally not sporty at all. At school physical education lesson was a torture. The only sport game I learned to play was badminton, and guess who bought the rackets and taught me to play? Dad, of course. Then I was the champion in the yard with approximately 10 kids playing it.

Father liked to have all the newest technologies at home. We had that kind of television, with a tiny screen and a lens. But I didn't care about watching it. He made a lot of amateur photos. Maybe, they were not very beautiful, but very lively. He taught me to take photos, adjusting the focus and the diaphragm, and then to develop the film. We might not had expensive and fashionable furniture, clothes, or jewellery, but we always had the newest music playing and recording equipment – record player with a diamond needle, reel-to-reel tape recorder, cassette tape recorder... He was fond of listening music – classical, jazz, very selected pop music – Vladimir Vysotsky, for example, and Charles Aznavour. It is his love for classical music, that much of my knowledge of it comes from him. I first heard the recordings of Bach's organ music from Dad's recordings and he is still my beloved composer. I love Vysotsky – as a poet, a musician, and an actor. I was shocked when he died young. I love Aznavour, especially his *La Bohème*, which I first heard with Dad. However, jazz is not my piece of cake. Except a few pieces like *Concierto Aranjues* by Rodrigo played by Miles Davis or *What a Wonderful World* or *Hello, Dolly* performed by Louis Armstrong, jazz is not what excites my heart. Dad introduced me to understanding, no, it's a wrong word, to feeling painting, especially impressionists. I understand nothing about composition, techniques, but colours and moods in the paintings have a mysterious impact on me. We had so many albums of reproductions of classical and modern art. I still like leafing through them, admiring them and feeling that Dad is by my side.

Dad always cared about my education. He always recommended me the books to read. Till the age of 18 I seldom read anything (besides the literature studied at school) unless Dad said it was necessary to read the book. Beside the fact that he realized which books were relevant for reading at what age and the world must-read classics, he had a very good taste for literature. At my younger age, he discussed the contents of the books to be sure that I really read them, at teens he discussed the books with me to develop my ability to think, to analyze, to formulate my opinion and argument it – all that today we call "soft/transferable/life skills." When I was 6, he started playing chess with me and he said I was doing well, however, I was not very interested, so by the age of 11 I dropped it, and by now remember nothing about the rules. Father read and spoke to me on a variety of



topics – history, art, geography (especially, travels), zoology, archeology, geology. Before that my timetable was relatively relaxed, but when I went to the fifth grade, he made up a very strict timetable, with a limited time to do my homework, so I had to do it quickly (maybe since then, I've been doing all intellectual work quite fast and in an organized way), with “lessons” on math, Georgian history and literature (as I studied in Moscow, he tried to compensate my lack of knowledge in this area), biology, and geography. As for the Georgian language, I didn't learn it due to Dad. Russian was spoken in our family. I just spent all summers with my grandparents and “picked it up” in a natural way from them and the children I played with. My grandma only showed me the alphabet. Much later, after I graduated and had to take my PhD specialty exams, I sat for the Georgian language exam for a month to learn the terminology to describe it.

All that Dad taught me was not school curriculum (I always did homework myself), but extra materials, from popular science books and some things he explained to me himself. I was doing quite well with math, and I liked it, especially geometry. When I grew older, we started physics, but that was a horror. Compared to math where everything is very logical, physics said “let's ignore this or that” and sometimes gave some formula without explaining how they were obtained, but I needed to apply them. So, after a portion of material, when Dad asked “Did you get it?” I said “No”. He tried to be patient and asked what exactly I didn't understand and I said I didn't understand anything, and this grew him crazy. He started shouting, and I lost my last ability to reason. Now I realize that when I didn't understand something in other subjects, he perceived it calmly and explained in a friendly way. But when I didn't understand his beloved physics, he couldn't understand how it can be, which made him very upset. Finally, he accepted that I would never become a physicist, but inwardly he hoped I would make a good mathematician, so he was very disappointed when I chose to be a specialist of English, and didn't interfere at all in my admission to the university.

He never praised me in public in my presence. Later, I heard from a couple of his PhD supervisees that he thought that I had a good mathematical mind, better than some of them, and I could have become a good, maybe even outstanding mathematician. This, and not my choice by itself, disappointed him. As I was his only child, he wanted me very much to inherit his profession.

This didn't spoil our relationships, but, when I failed to be admitted already for the second time (year) quite unfairly, he, as professor of the same university where I tried to be admitted could have asked the administration to admit me to the education by correspondence department with the same points (as the exams were over and I couldn't do a try there), and after one year, if I studied well, I would be able to be transferred to full-time education. But he flatly refused to do it. The third year I realized that, due to few vacancies at the department I was trying to be admitted to (only 10 people) and the corrupted system of admission exams, they would never admit me there, I chose another, less prestigious higher education institution with a lot of vacancies and was easily admitted there.

Returning to earlier time, when in the fifth grade I got a very strict timetable, which included, above what I have enumerated, music (piano) and English with a private tutor, I could hardly breathe. There were even five-minute gaps for toilet in the schedule. Mom requested Dad to give me more freedom, but he said that if she

wants me to become a somebody, that is absolutely necessary. With music things were alright until I started playing with two hands, which, like driving, was a tough task for me, as I am definitely not a kinesthetic learner. English went smoothly, but also required much time. So I firmly declared: “Either music or English – not both!” After some argument I was freed from music lessons, which I am sorry about till today. I realize I would have never become a musician, but to be able to perform for myself would have been so nice! I envy my daughter who can play the piano.

As Dad had no son, he needed a companion to watch football (I mean, soccer) and hockey on TV, so he, willy-nilly, watched them with me. Well, he made me a great fan! With football, it's still there. I still like watching a good match and won't miss a world cup match, if I only have a chance to watch it. With hockey, it ended when I started living by myself – without Dad it was boring, and the quality (to my mind, maybe I'm wrong) has decreased.

If the passion for football and hockey involved all social layers, however, mostly men, in the 1960s all intelligentsia, at least in Moscow, watched three TV programs: cinema travellers' club, club of cheerful and resourceful men, and figure skating competitions. Our family was no exception. We watched them together, which formed our social and aesthetic values. In the country of the notorious iron curtain travelling not only across the huge country which constituted one sixth of the land on our planet, but also to overseas countries, was a sort of the window open to the world. I learned geography not so much from school textbooks and even the books that Father gave me to read as from this program where you could not simply imagine, but also see it all.

The club of the cheerful and resourceful men (KVN) was not only entertaining, but also critical of the evils that surrounded us. People were memorizing and discussing the jokes we heard on Saturdays. The ability to hint, speak metaphorically (as criticism was permitted only from the top) about the disadvantages and problems, while presenting sort of musical parody was exciting.

Figure skating was exquisite, it united sports with the beauty of dance. When I didn't understand some ‘adult’ humour (I knew and cared little about politics at that age), Father explained what made the joke funny. In figure skating our tastes differed: he admired the experienced, refined, like in the ballet, with a deep understanding of music pair Belousova and Protopopov (twice Olympic champions and four times world champions), while I preferred younger and more dynamic Irina Rodnina (later she became 10-times world champion and three times Olympic winner) and Alexei Ulanov (he shared her success only four times as the world champion and once as Olympic champion). “This is art, and please keep silent while they are performing,” he used to tell me.

These were the times when the iron curtain just started to be a little bit open, and my father was among those physicists who were permitted to go abroad once or twice a year to a conference. With an open mouth I listened to the stories about his trips. He had a very observant eye and was a very good story teller. Later, when I started my trips, I told such stories to my friends, who also liked them, so I console myself with hope that my ability of telling interesting stories or telling stories interestingly was developed due to me Dad.

They say, one's father is the first man who should teach a girl she the most beautiful in the world and deserves to be loved. Well, my father was the person who brought me blue and silvery eye shadows from abroad when I was in the eighth grade. They really matched my eyes and since then I mostly use this makeup – I don't like lipstick too much and started using it from time to time only in my sixties, as for powder, my skin, like my mother's has been good enough without it so far. He bought me abroad beautiful and fashionable clothes that many of my peers lacked. My tick was sunglasses – blue, octagonal, mirror-like. I liked them so much and felt so special, wearing them.

When I was attending evening classes in Prep Department, Dad met me regularly at the tram station, to see me off home, so that nobody could bother me. Girls at university smoked, to show how emancipated they were. When dad discovered cigarettes in my handbag, he didn't scold me, but only said: "Well, that's the beginning, what then?" Dad's irony always hurt me, whether I deserved it or not, but when I deserved it, it worked better than any prohibitions or direct criticism. That was the end of my smoking history. Now I believe that anybody has the right to spoil one's own health, but not his beloved ones' health, especially kids. I can't imagine a more horrible picture than a pregnant woman smoking. By the way, my father quit smoking at 40, at doctor's requirement, so brought me up better than himself (probably, as I was a girl).

At the age of 16 I said I would never become a scientist like him. I wanted something more practical. I have always liked my teaching job. It keeps you young at heart at any age. Father was a born teacher, by the way. Dozens of young people came to listen to his lecture on physics accompanied by humorous pictures shown by overhead projector and classical music. They combined science and religion (creation of the world), art and music. Nobody heard on such an approach in the 1980s. He didn't do it because he was taught to do so. He came to this by himself. I hope I'm a good teacher, too, partially genetically, partially by imitation, but also through my scientific knowledge of profession, pedagogy and educational psychology.

A sugary-sugary picture, right? Well, not always that sweet. First, I wanted him to praise me, but he never did so in my presence. And only sometimes I heard about him praising me from other people. Second, he was quite a womanizer, and this hurt my Mom, so it hurt me as well. Especially twice, when it occurred side by side with me, and the girls were about my age. And finally, at 19 I fell in love with a foreigner. Dad used to be such a democratic person before that. He never prohibited me anything – just tried to explain his point. I understand his reasons – it could ruin his career, also if I married the guy and left for his country, parents might never see me again (who knew that the country was soon going to collapse!). But I didn't expect that he would take me, a grown-up girl, as a thing, and send me to live with my grandma in Tbilisi, in order to separate us. I cried, I was desperate, I was trying to explain to him how much I loved that guy – with no effect. My parents told me it was just hormones. And I would forget. Eventually, I obeyed, I had no other way, as at those times in the USSR you could only get married to a foreigner with parents' permission. But I was very hurt. Was it parents' egotism (they didn't want to separate from me)? Or were they right and I wouldn't have been happy alone in a strange country? Maybe I didn't love the guy enough, to fight with my parents for my love,

at the cost of probably losing them? Then it's my fault and not theirs. I don't know till today.

When I got married at 20 (to be quicker independent of my parents) and had children, our relations with Dad softened again, as he loved his grandchildren immensely. He called my son, named after him, "soko" which means a mushroom in Georgian, probably, because in his childish panama hat he looked like a mushroom. He spoiled his grandson with various expensive presents from abroad. Once he brought a kids' electrical car and took his grandson for walks proudly, gathering a lot of onlookers (at those times there was nothing like that in our country). Mom was very upset, she said he could have brought a good coat with that money instead – in our country of deficit of quality clothes it would be valuable.

When father fell ill, and especially after he died, I forgave everything that I was angry about and finally let it go. One should be able to forgive. Who am I to judge?! After all, I'm his daughter - my brain, looks, character, everything has been inherited from him. I'm very grateful for my knowledge and skills, for my love of music, art, figure skating, and travelling, for the happy moments we had together. Mom couldn't pardon him. Even after he was dead, she from time to time cursed his "adventures." She couldn't reach *him* anymore, but she hurt me by those angry memories, didn't she realize?! I think this sort of corroded her mood in her older years. Poor Mom! Dad enriched my life, made it meaningful, I can't imagine what it would have been like if one day Mom and Dad separated. Thank you, Dad, for everything!

## Chapter 7: People's letters and stories

### USA

No matter what we say about the modern family in the U.S., most of the work done with children is by women, especially as there is such a high number of single family households headed by women. Seeing the family dynamic in the world of special education planning and advocacy, I have seen that there are a lot of reasons why fathers don't seem to be part of the advocacy for students with special needs...work, travel time to work eats up a good portion of the day, time constraints, family structure, being unable to admit to the child's disability. And, a large cumbersome special education system would be just as happy to have only one point of contact when dealing with the child's education plans. Fathers are less likely to meet with the school staff unless there is a problem, then they are brought in, usually by the mother, as backups in negotiations, not as initial partners. It is a technique that works for both parents and it happens if the child is a typically developing child or a child with a disability. This sort of 'father engagement' happens most often in cases of school discipline. I think the lack of father involvements will see a culture shift. More fathers are home from the standard work day and seeing more and more of the work their partners do in raising children. It ain't as easy as the books or history or family stories make out. It's hard work raising a child unless there is a source (money, family) to aid the care-taking parent. Child rearing can be an all-consuming task and costly. Salary.com selected a handful of jobs that reflect a day in the life of a Mom, and using their Salary Wizard. They uncovered that the medium annual "salary" in 2018 of a mother was \$162,581 – rising nearly \$5,000 from their 2017 calculations.

Ellen McHugh, New York.

## South Africa

Lack of parental support and participation in children's education is amongst some of the major challenges requiring attention. Whilst for sometime the above role was dedicated to female primary care givers/ mothers due to factor that father's couldn't attend, nowadays all parents are working.

There is a thin veiled assumption that a parent who - in most cases a father - should be exempted from menial activities given his significant contribution to school fees. Greatly concerning is that even when women get paid higher than men this trend has not changed.

Secondly, in South Africa the legal system perpetuates this challenge since mothers or female caregivers are most likely preferred during a divorce or separation. Economic factors do sometime contribute to this challenge for a certain segment of fathers who are contract workers. This is due to the fact that they don't enjoy certain benefits e.g. leave days.

I think more engagement is required given that for some male parents even the gender of the child including the activities that they are most likely preferred by father's will differ. There is documentation suggesting that fathers are most likely going to attend boy child sports activities if he is excelling.

## Greece

My father is now 83 years old, his name is Giannis, Elina and I am his 52-year-old daughter. My father was a fur merchant by profession, self-made, he married his boss's daughter out of love. Ideologist, idealist, communist and humanist. I am the second daughter between two brothers. When I was born and my mother returned from the maternity ward, he planted a poplar tree.

My mother completely took care of the children. My father was distant from the three of us (an elder brother, me and a younger one). My mother also worked in my father's fur workshop. Regarding my parents' relationship with my school, I remember my mother taking on this role in elementary school. But in high school my father visited my school to update my performance. He was pleased with the teachers' opinion of me and was probably proud of it.

He listened a lot and talked little, he was serious and his opinion was almost always correct. Although he had only attended primary school, his level of knowledge and skills were at a very high level.

He was distant. I felt him close to me a few times, but in a discreet way he was always by my side, especially in very difficult times. It is as if he was reading me even without saying anything. Rarely did we get very close, especially in difficult family events, such as my little brother's operation... I remember it was Christmas and for the first time we were not the whole family together, I did not expect that it would hurt me, but I did not show it. He is magical way he knew everything, he understood what I was feeling and what I was thinking. It was unbelievable to me. I am still moved by this and he still understands me in the same way, without speaking. I remember a case when I was in elementary school, we were going to my grandmother and I got a conversation about school and my lessons. This was very important for me, it was as if he had been listening to me all my years about how I was doing with my lessons, with that I was filled with his interest in all my progress. He had a very developed acumen and empathy

(cognitive and emotional), something that my mother, who was almost always very anxious, did not have.

I did not feel that he understood me in what I felt and wanted. For Father significantly communicated with me through Mother, they seemed to be one and the same person in front of me. There are only a few facts that I remember about him, but we have always been five as a family with many memories of family moments, happy for all of us. The holidays were special, Christmas Eve, New Year's Eve, I remember the surprises of our gifts, the nights we went to the market and then we had lunch outside, the happy summer holidays on Greek islands. He worked all day in the workshop with the workers, under the house, he teased me with his own humor and I was angry. I kept a few conversations because he was quiet. In difficult times, he would tell me "do not be afraid, do not be afraid of anyone, go ahead". In my adolescence in my first relationship he acted like crazy, he wanted me to behave according to the standards (moral and social standards for the woman), he wanted someone important for me. Then I passed the exams and started studying at university, then I was completely liberated. When I finished my PhD, he gave me a gold watch as a gift.

My father is an important person for me. He always made sure that I had self-sufficiency, independence and the conditions to evolve in the future. Today, being 51 years old, I see that he is the only man who loved me in an absolute way, without possessiveness, selfishness, with absolute understanding, "home". It is a kind of true love. Even now he takes care of me... he gives financial aid from his savings for my daughter's tuition, as I have a beautiful single-parent family. Tatiani I.Gkatsa, Ioannina.

## USA

There's no denying that parental involvement in a child's education is a critical aspect of success for that child. Research and experience show us that those parents who take the time to be involved in their child's schooling have children who value education and are more likely to be successful in school. This is especially true for fathers. The role of fathers in their child's education cannot be minimized. I have always felt that fathers' involvement is critical, especially in terms of boys. Boys who identify strongly with their fathers will not see as much importance to school if their fathers do not. Lip service to the importance of education is the least fathers could do, showing up at parents' nights, attending meet the teacher meetings, and volunteering for school projects shows their sons that they mean what they say about the importance of schools. However, the reality is that every family does not fit neatly into stereotyped boxes in terms of parental roles. For a variety of reasons, there are times when other males in the family need to be the substitute for the father. In my case being born during WWII, my maternal grandfather played a significant part in my upbringing in the years before my father left the military and while he was looking for work after the war. The bond between me and my immigrant grandfather did not replace my attachment to my father, but provided me with an additional strong and lasting role model. Both took a strong interest in my progress in school. As an elementary school principal, I always sought ways to involve parents, especially fathers, in school-based activities, and encouraged teachers to do so as well. Aside from the benefits that such involvement yields to the individual student, involvement increases communication and support for general school programs and issues. Thomas C. De Bello, Wilmington, NC.



## Tanzania

I was born and brought up in a family of seven children. Our residence was located at the peripheral of a town council, the main occupation was subsistence farming - crop cultivation and keeping few animals.

My father and mom worked very hard in order to sustain the family. Our beloved parents and elder brothers and sisters ensured that the farms were thoroughly cleaned, and the young boys had the task of looking after cattle and goats.

Droughts paused a challenging and hard moments. Our father and my elder brothers were obliged to travel far away to search for temporary works so that they could buy food for the family.

My father was a very hardworking man, during favourable weather I witnessed bumb harvest, I remember we were among the few families to own a radio and a bicycle in the village. Sometimes during the weekend or public holidays cultural groups were performing in our compound.

At our home we lived with few other relatives due to our tradition of African extended family. The family was happy, we were getting all basic things.

Neither of my parents had received any formal education. But when I asked them to let me go to school, they allowed me and my young sisters. When I was back from school, I stayed beside my parents to read stories from the books, in fact, they were more than happy when they realised that I was reading fluently and translating to their mother tongue. My father always encouraged me, and when I was at high levels of education, they were feeling very proud of me.

I don't remember if there was even a single day when my parents visited the school, or attended a school meeting. In our country during those days the government and schools had no definite or strict policies about parents-school engagement.

According to my experience, I was very disappointed and unhappy when my parents had misunderstandings.

Generally I am proud to be born and brought up in such a wonderful family.

When I learned that I am going to be a father, I aspired a lot and had a big picture of a nice family. Although, not my dreams have been yet achieved due to rapidly changing world in all spheres of life. Struggles continue to mould my children, as a role model I keep discussing with them various issues concerning their future. In regard to our culture, the father is the head of the family, the coordinator and manager for this case.

As for your article on parent-school relationship, thanks, a lot Prof. Natela, for bringing this topic of which I may declare interest for it is closely related to my master's degree dissertation of which I am in the final stages of submission.

No doubt about the role of parents' involvement in the education of their children. Literature relating to parents' involvement shows that there is close association between parents' involvement and academic success of students.

Hoover-Dempsey and Sandler's (2005) model identifies the five levels of parents' involvement, such as 1.basic involvement decision; 2.choice of involvement forms; 3.mechanisms of involvement; 4.modeling; 5.student/child outcomes.

Parents-school cooperation is a two-way traffic. On one hand, parents' role construction, self-efficacy and life context are necessary on the part of parents, while on the other hand, welcoming school environment, customer care skills and management are crucial from the school staff. The behaviour of students and life context act as moderating agents.

Parents must collaborate with schools by communicating regularly, helping children to complete homework, discussing academic issues, providing materials and financial support, setting goals, attending PTO meetings, open-day excursions, and volunteering. Moreover, the teaching staff must encourage parents to such endeavour.

More literature agrees with the assertion that mothers are more involved in the education of their children than fathers do.

Therefore, this study is shading light on the topic so that educational practitioners, policy makers and other stakeholders may develop viable interventions and programs that may alleviate the situation.

Parents-school cooperation must be a shared responsibility of both mothers and fathers despite of the differences in the nature of their jobs, especially in some cultures. Parents' involvement in the schooling of their children improves their academic performance and achievement. Boniface John Y Chilongola, Morogoro

## India/ Taiwan

I want to share a few pieces of my childhood life. I'm blessed that my father was my first great educationist, sociologist, philosopher, or hidden curriculum instructor during our elementary, secondary, or undergrad level. Whatever he taught us earlier, I studied in my "Teacher Training Program aka B.Ed." He had a tremendous effect on our life. Still, I feel that I have the treasure of life. Although he was not an educationist or sociologist by qualification, because he didn't get any chance to continue his education, his progressive thoughts and life experiences made me strong, confident, and realized-aware of society, relationships, or teaching-learning processes. I see him as a social reformer, as it was pretty challenging to step out for girls to study, to do work. I see him as a curriculum instructor (based on Pragmatism, Naturalism). We used to learn while playing, learn while walking (Rabindra Nath Tagore); learning basic science-maths concepts as heat-expansion, proportion, profit-loss, etc. while doing daily chores; the importance of health and fitness during outdoor games; walk-talk-play in nature; created awareness about societal issues and support at any cost; we rectified our ways of reaction and many more. He never asked about the marks, but he always asked us to do our best, give our 100 percent. I'm blessed that I have such incredible life training from my father. Divya Baranwal, India, currently pursuing PhD in Education in Taiwan.

## Georgia

When I look back on my childhood, I start almost every section by remembering my father ... If I did something wrong, I was mainly "afraid" of my mother, but if my father was at home then I was not afraid of anything at all, I knew for sure that no one could say anything to me. When I fell off the bike, I told everybody I jumped awkwardly, because I was small and I was forbidden to ride a bike, only my father knew what really happened to me. When I broke my hand and my father took me to hospital with my mother to remove the plaster, I cried so much on the way out that

he bought me a lot of flowers, any I would choose. The first time the computer came in, only one of my neighbors had one. Then I remember my father brought us some bag and asked us to open it for him. I was the happiest child at the time because I already had the long-awaited computer. And there are many more such details that I can recall.

It has been 11 years since my father died. My closest friends know how strangely I felt his support during the most difficult moments of my life. No one knows how people make their lives, but all I know is that in the most difficult moments I have felt amazingly strong to get back on my feet, and as before, "I was not afraid of anything at all." I have never written a post like this before, but Today is Father's Day Ketik Chakhava, Tbilisi, Georgia.

## Turkey/Georgia

I have a large family, 2 brothers and 2 sisters. When I got married, I did not think to have a baby at once, but after 1 year of marriage, I felt the desire and will to become a father. It is very difficult to express what I had felt, when I learnt that I would become a father. It was an expectation of something very important and new but what I felt clearly, was the responsibility for him/her and that responsibility was the superior over the other ones. Now I have 4 children and that means I have to do a lot of necessary things to care for their proper upbringing. I remember that I tried to help my wife with those difficult sleepless nights while my first two children were babies. I wish to spend more time with them and I realize the time I spend with them is not enough, but thanks to my wife, we always manage to organize 1 or 2 days a week to be all together. I also feel emotional attachment to my kids even when I am not with them physically. Sometimes I also attend school meetings, ceremonies and festivals at school and in kindergartens, but I have to admit that generally my wife informs me about those events. I feel that my kids are free and not strained and stressed when they communicate with me and it is a great comfort for me too. My relationship with my elder son is friendly, sometimes I take him to my office or the site where I work, try to let him see and know what I do and how I work. I also go with him to other places and have man-to-man conversations. As for the girls, they are soft and nice and at the same time very active. I think that they really feel free and comfortable with me. Although they are closer to their mother regarding girl-like things, but the friendly and warm relationship we have is really felt and makes me glad. My father was a person, to whom we always felt love and respect, as he never prohibited us anything but gave such advice that we were ready to take it into consideration. My kids are the children and generation of the 21<sup>st</sup> century and I try to follow them and tailor my principles of upbringing to their wishes, as it is impossible to bring up the contemporary 21<sup>st</sup> century kids with the methods of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. I listen to them, because sometimes they are really great and useful advisors to me.

## Turkey

My father is not alive now, but his role in my life has been tremendous. It is his merit who I am now and what kind of a person I am now. I even realized that I felt great attachment to him at some period after his death. He was not only father, but more than father to me, a friend and a person to respect. When I was a child, mother was actively involved in my and my siblings' up-bringing. Father worked in a public institution in another town and we could see and meet him only at weekends. But besides

this, he always was active and encouraged us to study, always expressed interest to our desires and tried to spend time with us joyfully. What I remember about him is only that positive signs which he left in me and my personality. In that socio-cultural environment where I grew up, traditions and the rule to follow those traditions are very important. I was 16 years old when after finishing school mother decided to have me married, so I became engaged, but soon I realized that I wanted to study and make my own decisions in marriage and in my future, so I refused to get married and abolished my engagement. Without my father's support it would be impossible for me to dare and do so. Father always attended the important events and dates, he encouraged me to find my job, to live in another town alone and work. He was that live instrument who unified the whole family. The feeling that he had towards me was that great feeling and attitude which is called "trust" and which empowered me to be free in making my decisions. But besides that kind of liberty, I still often tried to ask him advice and seldom decided anything without asking him advice, because I concerned him a great advisor, too.

## Georgia

Father is associated with hope, support, understanding and friendship. He is not alive now. He never prohibited me anything, unlike my mother, he chose the style of communication of giving me advice rather than direct and strict prohibitions. If I had something to solve, some problems or challenges connected with my life at any age of my childhood and adolescence, he tried to advise me by telling stories about him, or from books he read giving me advice through those stories and always let me make my own decision. He never criticized me. I remember his word when he told me when I was an eight-year-old girl that the most important to his mind for human life were actions full of conscious responsibility and the desire to be honest and never to lie. Together with my father I often spent hours discussing stories in the books we read, we spent sometimes so much time talking to each other, that mother was even jealous for my being more friendly and open with father than with her. I remember those days when father left snacks, cookies and sweets beside my bed or in my room, as he knew how I loved to have them, especially when I studied much or prepared for exams. He always backed up my idea to continue studying abroad and also every attempt connected with my education and career. He was not very actively involved in my school life and never attended the events there, this was done by mother actually, but he was always ready to be with me. Even then when I made mistakes I could more freely admit them with father than with mother, as I knew that he would accept them not as mistakes or fault, but as action which needed improvement. He never tried to influence me or made me stressed to take always into consideration the opinion of the society and let others interfere into my life. He thought that nobody, neither me, nor others should let themselves or others interfere into one other people's lives, but all people are responsible for their own lives and decisions. Having him, I had friend and support, care and father all in one person.

## Lebanon/Qatar

It has always been well known that girls tend to be attracted to their dads and they build up a great relation with them. My relationship with my dad, being an Arab girl, has a flavour of its own.

As a matter of fact, my father has participated in tiny details of my everyday routines. Yes, he brushed my hair and fixed my ponytails, he prepared my school lunchboxes, dropped me to school, watched over my studies, cooked my favourite meals, took me to picnics, and a lot more on the list. Well, that seems normal to a lot of girls around the globe, but not to Arabs. The manly figure that still prevails in the minds of males restricts them from doing such tasks, as these are considered women stuff.

Aside from all mentioned, my dad has worked on shaping my character to be different. He has embedded in me the thought that I can reach the stars and I don't have to be following any trend. He has believed in me to an extent that he didn't only encourage me to finish my BA, but he also supported my decision to leave my homeland Lebanon and go beyond borders to grasp the opportunity of a better job in Qatar, which was not a usual act by the surrounding culture there.

Dad has never set me in a framework of abiding by the usual, he has pushed me to the limits with his usual phrase "You can do it, I trust you."

They say "distance creates coldness" and "out of sight, out of mind". Days proved these sayings wrong. Father's 'prints' have been everywhere in my life. He has stood by me through thick and thin. At every stage of my life, my dad has been that pillar that reminded me that he is unrepeatable. In our part of the world, divorce is not a delightful matter; parents in general do not seem to assist their girls in attaining it. Some consider it a shame, yet my dad again stepped to prove he is unprecedented. He valued my happiness and declared that my content is what is worthy and not those taboos drawn by our traditions.

At the time of writing this witness about my dad, I find it very crucial to mention that my dad is babysitting my kids in Qatar while I am on a short visit to Georgia for my PHD exams!

I would end up with a prayer to this man, May God keep you safe for me, my precious gem. I love you, Papa!

Riyam Badih Chaar.

## Georgia

I can safely be called a typical "daddy's girl", and I am by no means ashamed of this "label", but rather proud of it. I grew up in a good, friendly family and always received due warmth, love and affection from both parents. Our family consisted of four people: dad, mom, me and my brother. Previously, my paternal grandparents also lived with us, but they died when we were still children. I was seven years old when my grandfather died, and nine months later my grandmother passed away.

Despite the fact that my parents loved my brother and me equally, there was an unspoken division in our family, I was "daddy's girl", and my brother was "mummy's sonny". I'm not talking about the contemptuous established expression "mummy's sonny", which is more of a diagnosis and has negative connotations, but I mean a healthy, warm and loving relationship between mother and son, and that is why I affectionately call my brother "mummy's sonny." My brother was four and a half years younger than me, and naturally, due to his age, he needed more mother's care. However, this does not mean that I was deprived of my mother's attention, not at all, quite the contrary. Mom loved me very much and took care of me a lot, followed my education, took me to

music lessons, to a music school and to English classes with a tutor. I also loved her immensely and tried, when possible, not to upset her, respectively, both at school and later at the institute I was an excellent student. It so happened that it was I who was with my mother until her last breath, since my brother and his family then moved to live in Moscow, and my mother and I remained in Tbilisi. She died in my arms, and her death left me with excruciating and aching pain in my heart.

Forgive me for this small digression, but my infinitely reverent attitude towards my mother is another exciting and painful topic for me that goes beyond the scope of this project. One can talk about mothers endlessly, but the task of this book for each of us is the following - to describe, or rather, to reveal the image of the father and his role, in my case, in my life and the formation of me as a person.

For children, regardless of their gender, both parents are important and necessary. From their mother, children receive affection, tenderness, kindness and sensitivity to people, and from their father courage, willpower, the ability to fight and win. Only the combination of these qualities forms a full-fledged personality.

As a rule, the importance of the father's role in the upbringing of boys is being emphasized, and at the same time, there is an opinion that for girls, the presence of a father in the family and his participation in her upbringing is not as important as for boys. I think this opinion is deeply erroneous, since girls need a father no less than boys, it is he who is the main and first man in her life.

It is known that subconsciously girls choose a life partner similar to their father. Looking ahead, I can say about myself that I personally have always dreamed of meeting a man in my life who would be like my dad. The father forms in the girl her feminine self-esteem and demonstrates to her the attitude that, having become a woman, she will expect from men. She receives the first compliments appreciating her beauty and other virtues from her father.

The personality of her father and his behavior influence the formation of the image of a man in her head. If a father is a model of intelligence, courage, nobility, respect and love for his family, then, accordingly, his growing daughter will form the right views on life and true life values. This will help her in the future to meet a decent and worthy man in every sense and build harmonious relationships with him, or, at least, teach her to better understand people, distinguish the good from the bad and make the right decision at the right time.

The father plays a huge role in the life and upbringing of the child, as well as in the formation of his/her personality. It has been scientifically proven that children whose fathers took an active part in their upbringing grew up more successful and socialized.

In the upbringing of children, his living example is very important. Sons largely copy the way of life and thoughts of their fathers: they adopt their gait, demeanor, talk, gestures, and so on. From their fathers, they perceive such traits as strength, male reliability, enterprise, attitude towards the opposite sex.

Father's authority in the family should be indisputable, since he is the head of the family and bears both material and moral responsibility for family well-being, provides assistance and protection in everyday matters, at least this was the case in our family.



However, despite his authority in the family, my father was not an authoritarian person. He never tried to pressure me. The right to choose was always mine, even in the smallest things. Dad always considered my opinion, and when I got older, he consulted me in everything, because my opinion was important to him.

I recall an episode from my distant childhood, which is clearly imprinted in my memory, although I was only four and a half years old. Closing my eyes, I clearly see this scene, as if in reality. It was a hot summer, the end of June. My mother was in maternity hospital because my younger brother was born. I remember on a warm evening my dad and I went to the hospital.

I, small, tightly holding on to my father's hand, was walking next to my tall and strong dad. We went down the street and suddenly dad asked: "Maruska (as he affectionately called me), what do you want to name your brother?" Without even thinking, I answered: "Leva!" And my brother was named Leva. Perhaps this is a trifle, but for me, then a little girl, it was very important.

Later, when I graduated from high school and it became a question of choosing the future profession, my father gave me the full right to choose. Being a dentist, he naturally wanted me to continue the dynasty and get an education if not in the field of dentistry, then at least in some other medical field, for example, in pediatrics (he wanted me to become a pediatrician). However, since childhood, I dreamed of becoming an English teacher and was admitted to the Institute of Foreign Languages.

Despite the scope of his activity (dentistry), in which dad was a real ace, he was knowledgeable in many areas. He was a great conversationalist and it was very interesting with him. Having no musical education, while I had one, as soon as he heard any melody or opera aria, he immediately named the composer and the work.

Dad was an avid theatergoer. He adored the world of theater and cinema and instilled in my brother and me love for them from the very childhood. He had many friends among famous actors and stage/film directors. We often went to all first nights of plays and films. When I was a postgraduate student in Moscow, at Moscow State University, my father often visited me and there we completely much fun together, went to all famous Moscow theaters and watched amazing productions.

Dad loved me and my brother very much, took care of us, he did everything for our multilateral development. Dad dreamed that we would grow up to be good people and succeed in our profession. He was always proud of our success. I remember how proud he was when I defended my dissertation.

I always remember my dad with great warmth and tenderness. I had a wonderful childhood and youth. My dad passed away when I was 34. He died at the age of 66 from a heart attack. What is 66 years for a man, and such an active and cheerful one as my dad was?! It's been 31 years since he died, and I miss him so much. While dad was alive, I felt like a child and felt completely protected, because it was he who solved all global issues in the family. I have loved my dad very much, and I owe a lot in my life to him. He instilled in me a taste for art, taught me to take responsibility for my actions, love my work and do it as efficiently as possible, and also understand many life issues. For my brother and me, he was a true example of a wonderful father that one could only dream of, and for me he was also a model of an ideal

and worthy man who should be next to a woman so that she feels happy. The bar set by him was so high that later in my life it was difficult for me to meet a man in any way approaching the image of my father. My dad has always been out of competition. Marina Zoranyan, Tbilisi, Georgia.

## Georgia

My Dad Taught Me How to Love and Be Loved

"My little baby, always count on yourself. Do kind deeds and live your life with dignity. Make sure you create your life and never ever envy anyone". These words are so dear, timeless, precious and immortal. They linger into my ear as sweet advice.

A human being enters the family immediately after being born. This is where his/her character is formulated, s/he recognizes the universe, learns how to walk, speak and love family and friends. I myself grew with these values. Ever since I remember myself I recall my father acting like a real man. My daddy, my beloved dad, was my great friend. His one look was enough for me to understand what to do. It is his merit that I am successful in life. The father's love is eternal and endless.

We used to talk and argue a lot. Sometimes none of us wanted to give in. Eventually, we would sign the truce and he would tell me with a warm smile on his face: "My little daughter, my cutie, act as real Abdushelishvili would do. You are the daughter of your mom and me. Darling, I trust you a lot". His words were extremely encouraging for me and enlightened my mind to make meaningful and proper decisions.

Dad, you raised me to be a strong woman, taught me how to love and I am grateful for that.

Lela Abdushelishvili, Tbilisi

## Russia

The most difficult thing in memories is probably to be dispassionate and honest in assessing your life, and the events that happened to you once. Parents. They are remembered with sadness, longing and ... love. Everything happens in life: both bad and good. And it's not even about assessing your parents' actions. Looking back, already being yourself at their age, you try to analyze their actions, understand the reasons that pushed your parents to this or that behaviour. When we are 15-20 years old, we do not think about it, taking what is happening momentarily, as a matter of course.

What kind of a person do I remember my father? Very kind, gentle, and silent. Over the years, I realized that my unwillingness to monger a row, my preference to remain silent (on the principle - maybe I'll go for a smart one), apparently, has been inherited from my father. Situations in life are different - people often believe that if you are silent, not responding in any way or anything to rudeness and all sorts of dirt, then you are dumb as a rock. And after all, no one thinks about the fact that a person is silent simply because it is disgusting to answer rudely to rudeness or meanly to meanness. The main thing is to be honest with yourself, to act according to your conscience. Sometimes I see my father in my dreams. He just looks at me and is silent. And only by the expression of his eyes do I understand, or rather feel, what he is saying to me. Silently.

I remember when we lived in a communal apartment opposite the park, my dad taught me how to ski. And then he took me to the cinema. And there I ate the most delicious ice cream in the world - three huge balls of ice cream poured over with sweet orange syrup of bright red color. It was so joyful. For a girl of three to five years old, this was a bright piece of happiness. But this realization came much later.

And then we moved to another house. I remember how I didn't want to leave, I even cried at first. Most importantly, I never had to explain anything to him. You could snuggle up to him and it became easier.

The scourge of many Soviet families in those days was drunkenness. The famous catchphrase: "And who does not drink? Name them!" was applicable to my family as well. I remember how my mother sent me across the city to my father's workplace on payday. My father gave me five rubles, and I returned to my mother. Then the salary was somewhere around 60-90 rubles. How to feed two children (a baby and a nine-year-old girl) for five rubles a month is unknown. And then what? - Of course, rows. It happened in many families. Then I, of course, did not think about it. It was thought - well, what if he drinks? He doesn't hit. He can do any job around the house. He loves the children. What else? And so they lived. Was there love between my parents? I do not know. Any feeling, if it is long and systematically being destroyed, ends.

I remember how my mother insisted on a divorce. I remember how I was worried. He got remarried, but continued to visit us. I remember the ultimatum that my mother gave me before my wedding - that my father should not be there. I remember my father's eyes when I told him about it. I felt his pain, and it hurt, because I was, in fact, betraying him by passing him her ultimatum. He didn't attend my wedding. Many years have passed, and I am still ashamed of my cowardice and this meanness.

Later, when I already lived in another city, he came to my mother. For younger brother and sister it was a holiday. From that time, only a photograph remained - the New Year, dad, brother and sister next to him. Celebration.

And then he was gone. He committed suicide. Those who die on their own at that moment think only about themselves: everything is bad, life is empty and so on. But when you have children, why?!... He knew that I loved him very much. This is selfishness. I know how it is when it hurts so much that you don't want to live, but to give in means to be weak. But, no matter what, I wish so much he were alive! 21 years have passed ... I am no longer 20, and not even 35... But I would so much like, even for a moment, to see him. To embrace. And... to ask him to forgive my stupidity.

## Georgia

If I close my eyes and remember my school age and my father's involvement, I remember each his coming to kindergarten or school more like a movie, and I almost do not recollect or vaguely remember my mother (who was much more involved) doing it. That is, I felt from my childhood that the involvement of my father was very important and the memory of these unit cases was more memorable.

I still remember the first day of going to school like yesterday and I can remember in detail exactly what my father was wearing that day and what I was wearing as well. I remember how he held my

school bag and I also always recollected that scene how he led me hand in hand to school. All the children in the school cried who were in the preparatory (so it was called then) class except me, I did not cry because my father had explained to me in more detail what the school was the day before, he explained it in such a way to me that I understood and did not cry. I was not forced to wear a school uniform either, because I hated the uniform that was produced at that time, I said it was ugly, and my mother was angry with me, but my father told me then chose what you want and wear it. I did as he said, and what was there to cry about? My father told me that I ask a lot of questions and I am interested in many things, so they will explain everything to you at school and I was surprised what others were crying about.

I had an elder sister and a younger brother, my mother was more involved with them and I was "entrusted to my father" because if my father told me something, there was more chance that I would do it with less resistance, I was generally independent in the learning process, quite independent. However, I would turn to my father more often for help and my father would guide me, explain to me and give me instructions, if he did not remember something, he said let's see together and I liked the process, a joint search in books. And I never forgot what he told me.

When I told my father I had some problems with math, he took me to extra lessons with his friend, I liked that my father understood that everything was not going well and did not hide the fact that he did not know everything himself.

Dad never attended meetings with parents at school, it was mom's mission, it was not because he did not want, it was probably because other fathers did not go to school, and probably because, though, in the 11th grade, when a joint meeting of parents and students was held because of misconduct during the excursion, Dad went to school. I stared him in the face, he did not like what the teachers were saying about us, but he did not intervene until the end of the meeting. Finally he got up and said that he could not like what the school administration or the teachers were saying about the students, a little more tact was needed. We did behave badly, but at this age children are very sensitive and we have to take more care of their nervous system. We should not speak about them in this way. I remember the teachers' faces till this day, also all the students who sat with their faces down looked up in amazement to see whether it was said about them.

Father indicated to me by gesture to leave, saying at the door: "Do not look at me with such faces, I will not 'lecture' on my daughter in your presence. I will explain to her at home how she should have behaved. But I will also add that I haven't chosen a really good school for her. I will take my share of responsibility and I recommend you to do the same". That is why this case was not followed by "punitive actions". You know what really happened? The children who went on the excursion found out that there was a disco there and decided to go there, they asked for permission, but received a negative answer, so they ran away. In fact, I was not among them at all, I was reading something in the room, but it looked like I was the organizer. I did not say anything, but I remember my father just like that, a fair man. Nor did my father say my daughter was not among the kids who ran away.

All my life it was like this, my father never interfered too much in my life, but when criticized me, it was never painful, he always

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

taught me to take my share of responsibility for everything and that was probably his biggest contribution to my upbringing. Inga Tkemaladze, Tbilisi.

## Georgia

When they said that father is a girl's first unconditional love for the opposite sex, I could not understand because I was too small. As the years passed, however, the ability to analyze and self-study led me to the conclusion that there is a grain of truth in this phrase. I first met my father when I was six. I went to school that year, and my mother and I had to move to my father's place, who had returned 'from the army'. I had a terrible feeling of alienation and injustice as I was taken away from my grandparents' family where I felt the greatest warmth and love.

I had seen my father before, I did... My mother used to wake me up, dress me nicely, pack her luggage and somewhere in the end of the city my grandfather left us there ... in the "army" with my father. I vaguely remember that building and my feeling that why did not my father come to me, instead. I learned the truth in the tenth grade, imagine that before I believed that my father was in the 'army', but in fact he was in prison.

I could not stay at home with my father for a couple of days, I ran away with my grandfather, whom, despite being dead, I still consider to be a model of manhood, strength, endurance and love. Since then there have been my father's numerous attempts to express warmth and love, but somehow communication did not occur. Something invisible was holding us back, and it was alienation, which I have only now named.

I was a heartbroken child who could not understand at all what I had in common with this man. And what? He is a biological father ... I admit, my father tried to contact me a lot, he used to pick me up from school, he tried to help me love mathematics, he welcomed my friends warmly.

At some point we even got closer, though I loved my grandfather more. And it was at this time that a feeling emerged between me as a real, long-awaited child that I was, and my parents, in their mature and thoughtful years. And what happened to me? I felt a great relief ... here am I, your child, but let me go to my grandfather..

Years have passed. I have loved my father, but my grandfather has been the first, unconditional, boundless love of my life, who will never be forgotten. A caring man, the kind of man I have subconsciously been seeking among admirers in the age of transition. A hardworking, tireless, and principled man, the like of whom I may not have found. But I have developed myself to be like him. Therefore, fathers, before you start a family and especially have children, think about how much responsibility you take on yourself. Are you ready for that?

## Georgia

I have always been my daddy's girlie. My answer to the question "Who do you like better from your parents?": "Mummy will be upset if I say" always caused everybody's smile, but father never revealed whether he liked my answer.

Daddy... It's already your second birthday without you...

It is still too early to say that I have accepted it. It still aches when I miss your smiling face, recommendations and caresses.

My consolation is the thought of you having a quiet rest, because loving, caring, and supportive people like you, I believe, do not disappear without a trace.

Forgive me, if I considered you just as a father, now I think that you are the model of a person and the best father for me .

In dreams we are together again, and that is another consolation.

Bless me and protect me.

Yours, Baia.

I love you! Mari Baia Nishnianidze, Tbilisi

## USA

### *A Broken Skateboard in Hell*

*Synopsis: Penny is a sixteen-year old girl living in Dubai. She has recently seen her best friend, Kumaran, murdered, and is in therapy with Dr. Green, a psychiatrist. The novel centers around her efforts to bring the murderer - a classmate - to justice, and gain control of her life.*

Dr. Green called me courageous, which is one thing I've never been called. My self-diagnosis is anxiety/depression. But I guess I'm brave when I need to be. It took a lot of courage to talk to Dad. I didn't know how to talk to him, because I've never actually tried it before. I just wait until he finishes talking while trying to think of other things. I waited until late Friday afternoon. Mom was out, getting her scrips filled and having a few spa treatments. I knocked on the door of his office.

"I'm busy," he said, because playing World of Warcraft and chatting to your expensive girlfriend online takes a lot of concentration.

"It's important. It concerns your girlfriend, Miss Sri Lanka."

The door sprang open, and he stood there, scowling.

"What are you talking about? I don't know what you're talking about."

I explained that I had been spying on his computer, expecting that he would freak out or hit me, or something, even though he never has. Hit me, I mean. He freaks out over nothing all the time, but he isn't a hitter.

"If you're going to divorce Mom in a year and a half when I leave for college, I think we have a right to know. So we can plan."

"You broke into my computer! How did you guess my password?"

"Go Red Sox. Not exactly rocket science."

"Oh Christ. I need I drink. Is it noon yet?"

The guy is planning to desert his wife and child for some Sri Lankan Madame, and he worries about drinking before noon. "Quarter till," I said. "How about a Vodka Tonic? Return to your Polish roots in times of trouble."

"Want one?"

"Yep," I say, mixing them. I made mine weak because I wanted to keep a clear head.

"Make mine weak, he says. "I want to keep a clear head."

Boom. Like I suddenly realize, we are not so unlike, which is because we are related. He's an asshole, but he's my father. If I



was a man of his generation, and I had money, (which if I were a man of his age I probably would) I might be quite a lot like him. More like him than like my Mom, though I love her a lot more than I do him, or, at times, myself.

"We need to plan," I said. "We need to figure out our best course of action."

"Sometimes," he said, stirring his drink with his Mont Blanc pen, "Men are likely to say things in the...moment that they don't precisely intend to carry out. There's a poem.

A man believes in Romance

Cuz of that which he has in his pants.

He swears his love by the stars above,

And then, more than likely, recants."

"Wow Dad, you have a poetic side. Who would have thought it? Do you love her? Miss Sri Lanka?"

"I admire her. She's faced things. The fact is, she's more than able to take care of herself. Your mother isn't."

"So if you leave Mom you'll feel guilty, and if you don't, the girlfriend will leave you. Pull out the Catholic shit with the girlfriend to stall her, hope Mom doesn't notice, because she doesn't exactly notice things anymore, and keep up the misery we've all grown to love and cherish. Great idea."

"Very insightful. Jenny. Who would have thought it? That shrink lady must be doing her job."

"Given a large enough settlement, Mom will be fine, and no, she won't ever be able to have anything more than a toy job, and I'll be in college, so you'll be broke-ish. It's going to cost you to get rid of us. You'll have a lot of expenses. Do you think Ms. Sri Lanka would want you on those terms?"

"I don't know...maybe. She does all right with her own business."

"She runs a whorehouse."

"It's not like it sounds. She arranges introductions. She manages some venues, she..."

"Is a washed up whore running to the end of her looks and looking for a retirement fund."

"Does it occur to you that she might love me for myself?"

"No."

"No. Probably not. I'm not a good man, am I?"

"Well, let's just say the Dali Lama isn't worried about the competition, and you're not exactly well preserved."

"No. When I married your Mom, I thought, her looks, my brains... only it worked backwards in your case."

"That's the way it sometimes happens. It didn't get my moral character from either one of you. You need to think about the settlement - Mom needs about 100K a year to survive-and not here in Dubai - some place I can look after her. Maybe we're still residents of Boston, legally. I was even born there. It has some good state schools, and I can live with Mom, look after her. Figure 150K with my tuition and books for four years, then the payments go down to 125 K."

"125?"

"Inflation. Grad School if I want it. This is how it goes, Dad. This is the cost of being you."

He poured himself a double, and sighed.

"Men are pigs, you know that?"

"Some are," I said, thinking of Kumaran. Kumaran would never find himself in this situation. Kumaran did not have a pig bone in his body.

"Men are pigs. Beauty is the coin women pay for their love. Honey, stay away from men. A woman like my girlfriend, a woman like your Mom...like how your Mom used to be...even they couldn't get a good one. They settled for me. You? Your soul may deserve a Lamborghini in Paris, but your ass couldn't get you a broken down skateboard in Hell. Stay away from men. Even a blind guy would have to think about his street cred if he was seen with you."

"Gosh, Pops, thanks for the self-esteem boost. This is how it's going to go. If Miss Sri Lanka is still in the picture when I'm closer to graduation, then you drop the bomb gracefully, and I get Mom out. Poof, you never have to see us or think about us again. Like, automatic bank transfer, maybe even a second family to screw up, all the joy a man like you deserves. That's exactly how it goes." I walked out with my head up. Dr. Green didn't know how much she taught me.

I went to take a nap. Snowball, who has been unusually affectionate lately, curled up next to my face, and I snuffled into her fur a little. I drifted to sleep-like falling in to a snowdrift. I dreamed of snow. I have never really seen snow. But I will when I make it to Boston.

Then I had the coolest dream ever. Kumaran and I had skateboards. We used to make fun of the skaters, even though it looked fun. We are both completely klutzy, him because he was somewhat fat and me because I have these great big feet, my father's feet, that I constantly trip over. But in the dream we have motorized skateboards, though mine has wobbly wheels. We go off a ramp, and suddenly we are flying, like on magic carpets, over the skyline of Dubai and across the sea. I woke up laughing.

This largely autobiographical story was sent to me to a friend of mine, Ann Henry. It is an excerpt from her novel which, hopefully will be published one day (the working title is *Paradise of the Damned*; it is set in Dubai).

## Georgia

I love you, I swear on my Mom's heart,

My kind Daddy...

Shota Nishnianidze

## Father

To be a father is God's gift – a great talent, will, desire, and capacity. It is more difficult to be a good father. Not everybody can be a good father, they don't manage to. In short, they don't have the talent. Yes, talent! Some people can't be good fathers because he doesn't know what it means. Somebody specifically understand fatherhood. However, they after a while realize that they were wrong.

Father is the pillar of the family, the strong back, the power. For children he is the bravest, the kindest and the strongest. He is his children's hope, their future. Father is especially warm and loving with his daughters. He fulfills all their wishes, and the daughters adore him, look at him with hope and are sure that father will always be at their side, will encourage and praise them, will empower them and will put them on the road.

I would like to tell you about my father. He was a teacher by profession and all 45 years dedicated to this important business. It can be said that he had all those features enumerated above. He was educated, kind, honest, loving, good advisor. If I had some request, I addressed Dad. He never refused me. I had a habit to "report to him," I told him everything that happened during the day. And he listened to me attentively. Later I guessed that during this talk he also taught me things, but in such a way that I was never offended. I learnt many things from him. Dad had a great contribution to my success and I am proud of it.

Father works at school. So, it is not surprising that in my family there was a cult of books. We all read a lot, Mom, Dad, my siblings, and me. Later grandchildren joined in. Often I read overnight. I cannot forget that, when my brother joined the army, he took books with him. Later we sent him some more favourite books. After three years, he brought them all back home. My sister and I followed his path. We both chose to be teachers. My sister was a teacher of Georgian and literature, and I became an English teacher.

Father grew up as an orphan. He lost his parents when he was a little boy. He even didn't remember them. He used to tell me that I should love Mom more. First I didn't get it why. Later I guessed why. He lacked his Mom's warmth and love and wanted his children to love their Mom more.

Dad was a good spouse. He always supported Mum, helped her, cared for the family. He could also cook well. I still remember the test of the food cooked by him. I often use his recipes, but I cannot make it as delicious. I don't know, maybe the meals carried father's hands' aroma and taste, who knows?!

I recollect clearly my first day at school as a teacher. As a rule, they gave me the least achieving classes, but I had no idea it was so. I got ready for the first lesson, wrote the lesson plan, and opened the classroom door with energy.

I was anxious, naturally. I introduced myself to the students, went on talking. The class was deadly silent. Eventually, a girl shyly raised her hand and told me they could neither read nor speak English. I was shocked. The same situation was in other classes. That day I returned home in a low mood. I decided to quit from teaching position. Of course, I shared my plan with dad. He listened to me attentively and told me nothing the same moment. Later, in the evening, he sat by my side, talked much to me, and the next day I went to school again. My father's recommendations helped me overcome difficulties and achieve success.

For Dad his school job and his students were always in the center of his attention. He taught that family problems should never have an impact on my job at school. I will never forget how once he was in hospital. I took three days off at school to stay with him when my Mom went home. When he saw me, he was surprised, as he knew I had to be at school. He told me to go to school, as the kids are not guilty that you have some problems. He said I could come back after the lessons.

Everybody love and respected him. I remember when I was studying at college, I had an exam in my minor (as a nurse). All students left the exam room displeased with their assessment. They said the commission was too strict. I was well prepared for the exam, but was a bit anxious. I entered the room, took the exam paper, answered, they asked me a lot of questions, and one of them was especially active. In the end he asked me one question: "Where do you come from?" I answered. He turned to other commission members proudly: "This girl is my favourite teacher Ivane's daughter." I was excited. Then I got filled with pride that Ivane teacher was remembered by his former students.

32 years have passed after his death, but I always feel that he is by my side, encourages and empowers me. Even in the other world Dad cares for his family. People like my Dad do not die. He is alive in my memories, and it will always be like this as long as I live.

I miss you, Dad! I miss your voice, your talk, your warmth, and your care – I miss everything.

I would like to end up with a poem 'Father' by Shota Nishnianidze.<sup>3</sup>

When Dads are mentioned among my peers

I always think of the Heaven.

Normally nobody can tell me something

That can cause my tears...

That can make me weep and lower my head

With offence or regret...

Oh Dad, I wish to modestly please you

By saying I've been always proud of you.

Thinking of heroic deeds for motherland

You were not frightened by tiredness...

I love you the man that you were and

Will always be for me...

I know, it's hard sometimes for you,

And you will sigh for a moment...

Maybe it is sometimes my fault,

If so, please pardon me, Dad.

Don't get angry with me if I

Sometimes caress Mom more than you.

People don't dedicate poems to Dads

And I'm so sorry for that.

Years pass, sunny years,

And all the time he cares for us from the Heaven.

I love you, I swear on my Mom's heart,

I adore you, my kind Daddy... Guliko Janova, Akhaltsikhe

<sup>3</sup>Unfortunately, I couldn't find an English translation, and had to translate the poem myself. Please forgive me for the quality of translation, although I did my best to make it poetic.

## Georgia

My father is my hero...

I don't think there is a stronger and a fairer man than him in the world.

I've always been a different kid, and my dad was my best friend. He always stood by my side when I needed him. He always had answers to my questions. I went to bed only if Dad came with me to the bedroom. Till today I remember all fairy tales that he told me, and till today I can see them like in a movie. I remember each word and realize that every fairy tale was a life lesson, they taught me to be kind and humane. Only recently did I guess that the author of each story he told me was himself.

### My father is my hero

I remember dad, I recollect how he was waiting for me in front of the school and cooked the dinner for me when Mom was not at home. I recollect how he used to leave a red apple on the table for me. I miss that time every morning. I miss how he carried me on his shoulders.

Twenty years have passed after my father's death. However, he is still the greatest motivator in my life. He taught me that kindness has a great power and a smile can change a person's life. We used to talk in the village, by kvevri<sup>4</sup> full of grapes. These memories are a rainbow, which helps me to see that the good weather has come out.

My father is my hero...

I don't think there is a stronger and a fairer man than him in the world.

I am proud of him as I used to in my childhood and I still love him crazily.

Eliza Kinsturashvili, Tbilisi

## Georgia

My first recollections of Dad are when I was 6-7, when, before going to sleep my grandma was whispering prayers asking God to save my Dad's (her only remaining child's) life. Her prayer consisted of only two sentences: Thank you, God, for everything and protect my son. Of course, in childhood I couldn't analyze so many factors as now, but I always felt peace by my Dad's side and was never anxious about him, even when he had problems, as I decidedly knew, believed that God, considering my grandma's request, would protect him. After the unexpected death of my grandma I automatically, without real awareness, took this responsibility for my Dad's well-being on myself. Only years later I realized I was sending my requests 'up there'.

My father's life can be called quite tragic, beginning with his birth in 1960, till today. His father was a kingpin thief. He was raised mostly my grandma who was all the time expecting him from Siberia. Later he had to stand by his single mom, as much as he could, together with his brother (my uncle). Then his only brother heroically died in Samachablo<sup>5</sup> in 1992. I was born at that time. It looked like my Dad's and Mom's family life had to turn out to be

happy, if we take into consideration how much effort has my Dad made to marry her. However, by reasons I still do not understand, I would assess their marriage rather as a tragic one. Once, when I was in the primary school, while we were having supper, he told me: "My soul is suffering." He addressed me as if he was telling a priest his great hidden ache, to feel some relieve after that. I will never forget his face and eyes when he was telling this to me. At that time I was 100% sure that the reason of his suffering was my mom and his relations with her. I believed so for a long time, but now I doubt whether the reason was this or something else.

Dad is for me the source and the cause why I have been so much interested in the human mind and spiritual life, what visible and invisible processes occur there. It was my Dad who contributed first to my understanding that there is internal life (before later I got acquainted with mind anatomy), where feelings and behaviours come from, that it all is interrelated and we should not judge about anything in a too simple way. I quite early age I learned from him that there are such concepts as mercy, patience, etc. Here I can recollect the moment, when, also at quite an early age I started reading books from his library and one of the first things that I read was that the Greek philosopher Socrates wrote that human life then is worthy when he is a creator and creates and leaves after him something worthy. Then I thought that my Dad's life was worthy, and I experienced a very unusual feeling of happiness.

I can talk about Dad endlessly, however, I can pragmatically and laconically say that he was more outstanding as a person than as a parent. Starting with my teenage, our views on practically everything about which we spoke and disputed became radically different. We had many conflicts and misunderstandings. Was made me especially upset was the fact that I couldn't realize that the man with whom I quarreled so aggressively was the same person who once taught me swimming at the age of three-four, who took me fishing and whom I could tell all my secrets. It is strange for me that what I flatly disagreed with and protest again now, I have embedded in myself. And not because, I think, that I share the view, no! Simply because he has this habit and he behaves or thinks so. But I will never confess it to him.

During life, whatever stage of thinking I am at, while I am by his side, I will have a strongest internal feeling that even death cannot do anything to me. The more time passes, the more I need this feeling.

## Georgia

Talking about Dad is as sweet as it's painful for me. I have a sister and a brother, but my relationship with my father has always been different. My sister is the youngest, and she has always been treated by my Dad like a little one who needs caress and care. He had a sort of relationship with me as if he was challenging me: Well, can you do that? Or - I do not think you can do it. And it was as if I was just proving that I could do it myself, without his or anyone else's help.

I was a very brave child. I could ride a horse in the mountains better than many boys could and I had no fear. I got scared only once when the horse disobeyed me and ran towards the abyss like crazy. I thought like lightning: if it takes me to the rock, nothing will help. Neighbors saw it and tried to stop the horse. At last it stopped itself. Everyone thought I would no longer sit on a horse after that, but I realized that if I did not ride it again soon, then I

<sup>4</sup>A big Georgian clay pitcher, looking like an ancient Greek amphora, for preserving wine during the year in the ground

<sup>5</sup>In Georgia we don't say "South Ossetia," but use the historic name of the region



might never again overcome the fear, so I rode it again. I had that kind of character, and my father contributed a lot to that - both genetically and because of how he treated me.

My father was a cool guy, both physically and mentally, such people are nowadays called *machos*. Despite our seemingly conflicted relationship, I was often the only one whom he took 'hunting' (I write in quotation marks because we were shooting at bottles, making more noise than we were hunting for animals). We had a good time then. The heartfelt conversation by the bonfire was unforgettable. Even without hunting, he loved to have feasts party with me as his chap. Then he used to talk to me like a peer and I loved those moments very much.

Dad, before marrying my Mom, had another family, with two children. They were sort of jealous of me, as if we were guilty of something in front of them. Meanwhile, Dad divorced their mother earlier than he met my mother. Even today, unfortunately, we almost do not communicate, especially after they moved abroad. My mother, at the same time, used to tell me that she wanted me to communicate with them, however, they didn't want to. My father did not pressurize them or me, but he wanted us to be closer to each other. It didn't occur, what could I do?! My half-siblings did not lack care, but they were all the time dissatisfied with something.

When it came time to choose a profession, my father told me wanted me to become an English specialist, while I wanted to become an actress, but I didn't dare tell him and followed his wish. When I completed my studies, he said that one needs acquaintances to be employed, and it is better for me to sit at home. I will give you the money, he said. He wanted me, it seems, to be dependent on him for a longer time. I will settle it by myself and I do not want your money, I said. He only raised an eyebrow. A former lecturer of mine recommended me and I started working at a private university, albeit initially in the library. And so, he had not given me money since (of course, he always brought contributed the money that the family needed). After some time, a little teaching load was offered to me. "You?" - he asked in surprise. I was later given TOEFL classes to teach. He knew how much it cost to train for taking the TOEFL exam, because he was paying for my sister's private lessons to prepare her for the admission to the institute, and he knew what we were paying the tutor for it. Yeah, good of you! He told me shortly.

Without such an attitude, I probably would not have achieved much. I also bought a car with my salary later, I never asked for money for it. Only when I started studying for a Master's certificate, he gave me money to study, and this was because my aunt told him that it was study and it was necessary for my future.

He was also an English specialist by education, but he did not work in the field, he was in business. He could work hard, but he did not attach much importance to money, when he had it, he spent it generously. Sometimes he was left without money due to failure in business, but he did not care much about that either. Once he gave me his gold cross for sale, when he needed the money, I did not sell it, I kept it, and I earned the money myself.

We were already adults, when father and mother separated. They still did communicate - when you have three common children, it is impossible otherwise, - but they could no longer be together. I felt very upset by my father because of this. For some time I did not speak to him. However, after his death I was thinking about

many things and realized it wasn't due to him.

Dad asked me to help him reconcile with Mom, but I did not. I said this is a matter between the two of you, do not ask me to intervene. Earlier, when I were arguing with Dad, I said angrily: I wish you never need to be taken care by me and be OK by yourself! Such a man, I might be saying nonsense, but I think, he should not need to be cared after by somebody. It would have been better for him to die suddenly, for example, from a heart attack, than to feel powerless. Who could have known that what I said would come back to haunt me in the end and I would have to look after him.

Once, he had an accident, his car overturned, he got a grave injury on the head. However, he sat behind the wheel himself, and came back home. He said, "I have not broken anything, it's no problem!" Doctors were telling him to take care of his health. But he was the kind of a man who said he wanted a full-fledged life lie he had had so far, he didn't want to depend on doctors and medications. He acted as if nothing had happened, and finally he developed traumatic Parkinson's disease, he could not drive, and finally couldn't leave his bed. After he became ill, all the causes of our quarrels disappeared from me. I just caressed him and did everything I could - I found the best doctors, expensive medicines. I had to sell the cross that I had not sold before. I worked day and night to earn money and took care of my father. Still I could not help it and he eventually died. Then I realized how much I loved and needed him. We were both strong-willed, and we had a hard time quarrelling with each other. At the same time we loved each other very much. My motivator died.

Once my lecturer and later colleague with whom I shared the office for years told me to pardon him. I am grateful to her for these words and I am glad that I managed to pardon him for everything and restore the relations with him in his lifetime.

## Iran / Georgia

### The ongoing journey

Small drops of water are difficult for me to distinguish. The vision is occasionally clear and occasionally hazy. Drop by drop, the liquid flows from a tank through a narrow hose and into my veins through a needle attached to my wrist. I'm dizzy and remembering things slowly. My other wrist is in excruciating pain. I examine the bandage and recall cutting my vein with a sharp razor. They saved me, oh my God! This time, too, I was unable to put a stop to my misery. A decision that I thought was selfish at times and wise at other times failed. My father remarked furiously the last time when I consumed a handful of pills and woke up in the hospital that I wouldn't die if I took these tablets. To get to the target next time, use a razor to cut the vein in your hand, he said! At the time, I couldn't tell if he said it out of rage or because he truly didn't want me to live. This is something I've never understood. It's been like this since I was a child. I never knew whether he liked me or despised me. I had no idea what his beatings and insults meant, let alone his emotions and wastefulness. Memories rush by like a train in front of my eyes. On good days, he'd take my brothers and me out to eat, buy us our favorite outfits, and do anything he could to make us happy. I recall being unable to enjoy his good mood because of my fear of returning to his terrible temper. Every second, I expected everything to come crashing down on us, complete with beatings and insults. His mood was unpredictable, and I had no idea what was going on

inside him to cause such extreme mood swings. Anything that is considered regular in other people's lives could lead to a terrible dispute and brawl in our house. I was continually looking for a solution to this immense suffering in my childish mind. My aunt was a voracious reader. She stated that my father had a mental issue. She claimed he had both paranoid and bipolar symptoms. He used to lock himself in his room for days and wouldn't let anybody else in. He was crying when I looked at him through the keyhole. Maybe he'll regret beating us and cry, and he'll be kind once it happens, I reasoned. As it turned out, he was content following the depression. It was time to have some fun until the storm started up again and the story had to be told all over again. My mother once went to see a therapist in private and told him everything. My father needed treatment, according to the doctor. My mother approached the subject with caution and deliberation when she spoke with my father. What a shambles it was. My mom had been assaulted and bruised throughout her body. That day, I realized our circumstances would not alter. I return my gaze to the drips. In front of my eyes, the train of recollections continues to whistle. Leaving school, obtaining work as a cashier in a store, and being kidnapped and raped by three local boys on the way to work. Following that, I attempted suicide once. An attempt that failed, and as a result of that occurrence, I became incredibly obsessed. I scrubbed my body with harsh detergents and felt filthy all time. The situation at home was deteriorating day by day. Trying to persuade my mother not to give up and stay in this situation, her passivity and inaction, my brothers' depression, my second unsuccessful effort to commit suicide, running away from home, pregnancy, marriage to a man 20 years older than me (it was as if I was looking for a father in him), none of these things made me feel good. When I ran away from home, I reasoned that being out of the atmosphere would help me relax. I was able to become financially self-sufficient, and I even gave my mother and brothers money. I, on the other hand, did not relax. Day by day, I was becoming more aggressive. There was an opportunity for immigration, so I persuaded myself I was leaving, giving birth to my child, and starting a new life. It was ineffective. When I met with a therapist, she told me that I was trying to get away from myself. "You have to make a change within yourself, or otherwise this will be the scenario everywhere," she remarked. I pondered on what she had said. I was exhausted. I was sick of suffering. I wanted to make modifications, but I didn't know how. She stated that she would follow me on my journey of transformation. I so wanted to believe her. She stated I had a whole package of schemas, including abandonment, emotional deprivation, shame, and defectiveness, ... and that I had borderline personality disorder. She added that it takes a long time to realize yourself, your actual self, who is full of skill. I desperately wanted to believe, but I was too exhausted to do so. It went smoothly on occasion, but it was frequently disappointing. Worst of all, the relationship I had just begun had taken a toll on me. In this sense, I struggled to be liked and killed my half-life self-esteem; I had nothing left. I used to say that my child would be helpless when I died, but what did I do? Did having my parents around me as a child benefit me? My child will follow in my footsteps. I'm in excruciating pain all throughout my body. Is it true that a vein slashed hurts that much? Not because of this wound, but because of a deep soul and spirit sorrow that has blanketed my entire body. I cry as I stare at the dripping drips. The nurse injects a sedative. My eyelids become droopy. The train of recollections whistles away. This time, instead of recollections, there are some

questions: When did this cycle of misery begin, and how did it begin? Is my father aware of the impact he has on our future? How was he going to help himself and us? Is this something I'm doing with my child? Who can assist me? In whom may I place my trust?

Narges Mahmoudi, clinical psychologist (This is part of the novel she is working on, which tells some of her patients' stories).

## Poland

Let me begin by answering the question, why am I interested in fatherhood if I don't have a child. Financial stability has been the most important thing for me for a long time, it was so important, that I moved to Netherlands to earn more money. After working there for 6 years I returned to Poland and bought an apartment without taking any loan. Getting to the point, half a year earlier I returned to Poland during vacations. I visited my cousin Anita and realised she was not completely alone even if she was twice divorced. She was living with her daughter of whose existence I wasn't even conscious. 30 hours later, leaving them and getting back to my things I had serious doubts concerning my plan (financial stability first). Maybe I should not focus on money so much, but I could not say it's over, I was 30 at that point and now I'm just 31. Anyway I'm totally charmed by Zuzia (Anita's daughter's name) and it is not passing. Since then I came back from Netherlands I visited them like 20 times, sometimes I think Anita might perceive it as intrusive, but as long as she is not concerned about it straight away, I'm not going to change it. Their presence is just something that makes me happy. Seems like I just love kids, right? Things should be as simple as get one now, right?

Well, there are other children in my family, I have other two cousins with children that I met, and my brother with his 2-months-old son. Surprisingly, they do not make any impression on me, but meeting Zuzia is an opportunity I cannot come by, meeting any other children is almost indifferent for me. I wrote it already a bit longer than I wanted, so to summarise I will just add that I love a child I cannot raise and I'm afraid it wouldn't bother me if I got my own. By I'm afraid, I mean, I will not get one if there is a risk I will not love him or her as much as I love Zuzia (there must exist a better phrase than "get one" describing child appearing, but I'm certain you already found out how limited my English is).

Now another story, let me tell you about my friend. When we got into adulthood I have been socially withdrawn, he was completely different, by which I mean he was partying a lot, he was meeting plenty of girls and he went through a lot of relationships. Things worked like this for several years (and, honestly, he might have several children of whose existence he wasn't aware) until he met his last girlfriend. Their relationships lasted unusually long, his average time spent with a girl in relationship was a month, I guess, maybe even less, this time it lasted like 3 months until he finally said "All right, I'm single again". Well that changed after half an hour, and what I figured out was, he abandoned every single relationship when first tension appeared and here it went different just because his incoming-mother-of-his-child asked him if he was going to apologise her. I don't remember what was the case, but it doesn't matter, the thing that does matter is it happened again three times later, and every single time my friend had to be asked if he was going to apologise. Incoming-mother-of-his-child changed her habit of asking for apologies when she was pregnant, so you can already imagine what happened next.

My friend returned to pattern he knew and cut contact with her as far as he could, which was not entirely just because of the child support which he need to pay every month, and his mother claims to at least get some pictures of her granddaughter. Things worked like this for 2 years, until an already-a-mother-of-his-child appeared in his home again (invited by my friend's mother). In this situation my friend claimed he would try to fix their relationship and he would do his best to be a good and involved father. That happened just a week ago, and next week I'm going to see him, to figure out how he advanced the situation and to estimate the chances for him to change his life. I made that story even longer, and I think the question I asked in the previous message was way too complex. Also I'm not certain if any of this might help you anyhow, but if you want to keep drilling the subject, I'm more than willing to get into details. Yanusz Jaxaxa

## USA

### Abstract

The impetus for my research included challenges related to rectifying underachievement in gifted girls. This author believes the presence of necessary support, encouragement, and guidance through childhood and youth could alter that consequence for girls of all levels of ability. While much research has been conducted investigating the mother-daughter relationship, little to no research has investigated the supportive relationship of a father with his gifted daughter. These vignettes of father support were drawn from stories of fathers and their daughters to highlight the nature of a supportive relationship between fathers and their gifted daughters. In toto, the qualitative research materials of my dissertation (2002) were obtained from the investigation of personal constructs of father support of giftedness in an intergenerational perspective in eight intact families with gifted daughters. Data from three 90-minute in-depth interviews with each father and daughter, and one 90-minute interview with each mother were used to develop a grounded theory of father support of giftedness. Over 2,000 pages of cleaned data were coded and analyzed, and a theoretical model of giftedness was developed that describes (1) intervening conditions influencing support, (2) causal conditions fostering support, (3) phenomenon of father support, (4) context fostering support, (5) context within which support is perceived, (6) action/interaction strategies, and (7) consequences of support. Subcategories for each category of the model were identified and are included in the model. Implications for education and research were addressed.

Sylvia L. K. Blanchfield, Ph.D., Retired nurse educator and administrator. (April 2022)

### Father Support of Giftedness: Encouragement

Father: I do not know what we did for her that was especially supportive in nature unless it was that we loved her. I have always felt that it was my responsibility to see what she needed and to be aware of her interests, and then to the best of my ability to help her achieve whatever goals she had.

Daughter: In the early grades he would always try to help me with homework and keep me motivated. Later he would try to reinforce what good study skills I had and bring others in like "Why don't you sit at the table instead of on the floor in your room to study?" Now that I am in college, I do not know how much it has changed from his end; I appreciate him more. I think most people would say that about their parents. I look forward

to talking to him. It is interesting to compare notes with him, telling him about what is going on and discussions about stuff I am learning. You know, I will hear something related to what he knows, and I will ask him about it. I have a stronger sense now that I know him better, and a stronger sense of pride in him.

### The Father-daughter relationship over time:

Father: From infancy through early elementary, she and I spent a lot of time together. In the evenings after dinner, she sat on my lap while I told her stories and read to her, she could never get enough of listening. Somewhere in elementary school things changed; she was growing up. She began developing friendships in school and participated in various activities. As soon as she began piano lessons music flowed from her fingers. She took dance lessons for 13 years. She loved music and she loved to dance.

Through those years of childhood, I was enjoying the music; I was in the background watching her dance, listening to her music, helping her to the extent I could with her homework, especially math. During those years I never thought of being all-consumed by my work, not ever. I took her to lessons sometimes, to dance a lot, and was the one taking videos during each of her recitals. I never missed a one. Never ever, ever missed a one; I never missed one of her parent-teacher conferences. Work never came in front of that, ever.

Father: During early elementary school, I would take her out of school for a day now and then and we would travel to my seminars. When I went to professional conferences in places like Washington D.C. or New Orleans, where either my wife or I were delegates, we took her with us and made it a family vacation. So, there were those kinds of interactions where both when my wife and I were with her, or my daughter and I were together in a business sort of setting.

In fourth grade when she was eligible for softball, I thought "Volunteerism is one of those things that I'm supposed to do. I'm an adult now, I have this daughter and she is going to have a softball coach, I guess it might as well be me." And so, for about five years I was a softball coach on her team. We would talk about the game. We would talk about how people had practiced that day, or how they had played in the last game. She would help me with the lineup for the next game and things like that. Our relationship was often one of just including her in whatever I was doing.

Father: When she was in Middle school, we saw her getting too "bookish" and encouraged her to expand her interests. Because she showed real interest in dance and the arts (the same areas I had enjoyed during my school years), I suggested we take classes together that summer. She liked the idea, so we took a painting class and a tap-dancing class. We would practice our dance steps for an upcoming recital while we waited in line at Taco Bell!

Father: By Junior High, our daughter had an expectation that things would come easy for her. I don't think she would use those words, but as we watched her try to learn softball, try to learn to do the math, learn piano, and so forth, it appeared she had an expectation that "I can do it" without recognizing that those of us who already "do it" and make it look easy, spent a lot of grueling time practicing getting to that point. She was reluctant to admit that practice was required. In response to her frustration that it did not come out right the first time, I tried to encourage her by saying "It's okay", and "You can't do everything right



the first time.” “You do have to practice these things.” “These are skills you develop over a period of time and the fact that that it didn’t get right the first time is okay, you’ll get better the next time.” So, much of my reassurance was in response to that little quirk of hers, impatience that “I should be able to do this.”

## How have you nurtured your daughter's giftedness?

Father: Not really. Looking back, I would say Nadia was already on the right track. She was internally motivated. We just provided internal energy for external fuel. For example, whenever she needed some material thing for her study, anything, we never made any objection to those. I always knew we would buy “chapter books,” I just did not know she would need them so soon. So, I would say our influence was more along the line of motivation, rather than someone who missed an idea at the beginning. I remember when she was young, my wife and I were both graduate students, and we learned our daughter needed more reference materials at home. Though we were students we went out and bought a set of Encyclopedia Britannica, they were awfully expensive. The sole purpose for that purchase was they were for our daughter. I do not know if you call that an influence on her learning.... but that is all we did. We provided material things to keep her moving forward.

## Did you have to encourage your daughter to study?

Father: No, I cannot remember anything like that. She had the most impressive study habits of anybody I have ever seen in my life. I remember that she struggled with algebra, and then wound up preparing for the final exam chapter by chapter, working all the problems in the parts of the book that they covered. I never would have done that. I would ascertain what concepts I was good at, and I would not have bothered with those, I would work the problems I had trouble with. I could not imagine doing the kind of preparation she did; needless to say, she did very well in algebra.

Father: We certainly have not put any impediments in her way. That is the biggest thing we have done. We have not criticized her or said, “Why are you choosing to do art, what the hell are you going to do with an art degree?” or words like that. We have had some discussions but never of a disapproving nature, so I think we have always supported our kids in what they wanted to do. We have not really had a situation where they wanted to do something that we thought was outlandish. In general, I think I have certainly been interested in making their minds as sharp as possible. There hasn’t been a conscious effort to nurture them intellectually, they have internal drive and I think we’ve been supportive and given them opportunities to do things if they felt like doing it.

Question: What kind of disagreements or conflicts have you had with your daughter, and how were they resolved?

Father: Well, a conflict was usually a situation where she wanted to do something, and I did not think it was necessarily a good idea. An example is, going on a camping trip with her boyfriend, and the long trip she made to Colorado to climb Long’s Peak, things like that. Most of the cases have been like that in terms of, she wanted to do something but, certainly there were limitations. So, the way we typically went about that, I told you she loves to argue, well, she would set up a logical argument, however, which is artfully designed so that it all leads to her getting what she wants. Then we went through that argument together.

For example, she wanted to borrow our car for the trip to Colorado instead of impinging on the boyfriend’s family car. We

did not particularly want to have to rescue them out of the middle of nowhere. So, I had to ask her if she had figured out what she would do if they broke down when they were in the middle of Colorado. And I had to ask her what they would do once they were in the park, how do they leave their name so someone knows where they will be hiking, and how they will figure out whether it is safe to climb mountains, things like that. Those are the sorts of questions that I raised, and she came back with answers to all of them, in terms of how she would manage each situation. Finally, I said, “Okay fine.” Her responses are always thought out, but they are also very much pointed towards her goal.

Her typical response would be “Well, we’ve talked this out already, amongst ourselves.”

That is important, but she is still young. So, I am not sure she really has all that managed. She is a responsible girl, and there are very few times when she does not get what she wants. However, sometimes we make her go through some hoops, and we make sure that the hoops are there. Before she took the car to Colorado, I insisted she check the oil, transmission fluid, and radiator fluid, checked all functions of the lights, and changed a tire. She did it all.

## Did you have a philosophy of parenting?

Father: I think more than anything, the important thing was just being a good role model in whatever we did. Kids, people in general, learn by seeing and watching people they respect, watching what they do, not necessarily doing what they say, but watching what they do. That is the main thing, being a good role model. Being a good role model includes things like showing that you love your kids’ mother, it is taking an active role in their lives like coaching softball, it is showing them it is important to be involved with your family and with your kids. It is just living a good example.

## Observations about Self-confidence

Father: She has always had quiet self-confidence about herself. I would have to say she has become more confident as she has gone along. She has become more willing to speak out and stand up for her rights. She certainly is not unwilling to try different things now that she is in college, just the fact that she’s in a field of study in college that is not typical of a girl, she’s never done things the easy way. She will go off on trips they set up to go to Appalachia and help disadvantaged people in their homes. Or she will go to Denver on a spring break trip and work in the soup kitchens whether she knows somebody else going or not, I never would have guessed she would take those risks, but she has self-confidence.

Sylvia Blanchfield

## Chapter 8: My research articles dealing with fatherhood issues

Proceedings of International Research Conference on Education and English Language Teaching (IRCEELT) 2017, pp. 582-591. Tbilisi: IBSU

## Parents-school cooperation and fathers' role in it

### Abstract

The goal of this paper is to find out, whether in Georgia fathers are less involved in parent-teacher organization (PTO), and if so, why.

The paper will also try to make some recommendations on how to more efficiently involve fathers in their children's schooling. It has been shown in the literature analysis that father involvement depends on the relationships between the spouses, children's age and gender, initiator of father involvement, socio-cultural attitudes towards father's role in caring for children, teacher/administrator gender with whom the father has to communicate, father's engagement in his job, existence of educational knowledge, etc. The research held was empirical and involved a questionnaire on father involvement in PTO. The questionnaire, to which 175 people responded, involved two personal questions in multiple-choice format (which category of the focus group the respondent belongs and his/her residence), five content questions in a 5-point Likert scale-like format and four multiple choice content items. The conclusions made are: fathers should be better involved via mass media about the importance of the role in their children's education, also schools should be active in the process of fathers' involvement.

**Keywords:** parents-school cooperation, parental involvement, father roles, childcare

## Introduction

According to McNeal (2014, p.564), "parent involvement is any action taken by a parent that can theoretically be expected to improve student performance or behavior".<sup>221</sup> Most of the existing research<sup>222,223</sup> on the issue states that parental involvement is beneficial for students' academic achievement. However, some researchers have found that it is not so.<sup>224,225</sup> Probably, these inconsistencies deal with too broad understanding of the term. If, for example, we view parental involvement as corporal punishment for poor results, it certainly can only harm student's learning in a long-term perspective, while reading some extracurricular books together will definitely contribute to the child's education (if the books are appropriately chosen). So, if viewed in its positive sense, parental involvement can be viewed as "social relations that are imbued with norms of trust, obligation, or reciprocity".<sup>221</sup>

One of the essential types of parental involvement is parent-teacher (or parent-school) organization or PTO. PTO is beneficial for all three parties: children, parents and school. Children attend lessons, do homework and learn better, as they see that this is important for their family. Parents become closer to their children. School discipline improves, so does the learning environment.

When we mention parent involvement, we, in fact, mean mother (or other female relative) involvement. Although fathers' direct involvement in children's lives (not only via economically supporting the whole family) has been definitely growing recently due to social changes, such as increased female participation in workforce and entailed changes in gender roles in the family.<sup>226</sup> their direct participation in parent-school relationships tend to lag behind.<sup>227</sup> The goal of this paper is to find out, whether in Georgia fathers are less involved in PTO, and if so, why. The paper will also try to make some recommendations on how to more efficiently involve fathers in their children's schooling.

## Literature review

According to systematic theory of Bronfenbrenner,<sup>228</sup> relationships between the spouses have an impact on father-child relationship either directly or indirectly. Christensen and Sullaway<sup>229</sup> classify communication models in families as mutual constructive (effective relationship model), mutual avoidance and mutual

demand/ withdraw communication (ineffective relationship models). In families where both parents communicate with each other, normally they are more involved in the care for their children. They often share functions in caring for children, they agree what will be done by both parents, and what – by one of them. Parents who communicate with each other on mutual demand/withdraw model argue who will do what, but they seldom come to consensus, so either children are left to themselves, or – in best case – completely to mother's care. In families where there is no communication between spouses one parent (either father or mother) may take care of the child, but more often children feel abandoned, as the model spreads on them as well. Lack of communication between the parents often leads to weaker father/child relationships and becomes the reason of child's numerous problems in the future life.<sup>230</sup>

Father's involvement (or the lack of it) in child's education begins during the pre-school period. Father who has talked to the child on various issues to widen the child's horizons will most probably be interested in his/her education in the schooling period as well. This more often takes the shape of systematic or periodic monitoring of what / how the child is doing at school, helping with homework on his own initiative or child's / wife's request, however, some fathers are also actively involved in taking the child to school (especially if the wife does not drive a car) and even attending parents' meetings or some special school events. Although it is not very traditional to see fathers at school meetings and events, with growing women's engagement in workforce, this is becoming a reality. The impact is definitely positive. Fagan and Iglesias,<sup>231</sup> for instance, found that fathers' involvement in children's (both genders) education causes an increase in children's mathematical schools (many mothers cannot provide effective help in this, traditionally male, area). Research has shown that fathers with a higher educational level are more often involved in school activities, while the economic status of the father has not been found related to his involvement in school meetings. Men with higher level of income but not very high level of education are usually completely disengaged from their children's schooling.<sup>232</sup> It was found that, if schools are offering various activities requiring fathers' participation and insist on involving fathers in school life, fathers more often agree to be involved, while fathers seldom participated in school meeting, partly feeling that their participation may cause undesirable curiosity and even conviction, as the majority of fathers seldom attend school meetings.<sup>233</sup> Older fathers more often are engaged in parent-school relationships than less mature ones.<sup>234</sup> Also, the older the child becomes, the more involved in his/her schooling the father usually is.<sup>235,236</sup> Fathers seldom have the patience of dealing with little kids' education and find it too 'elementary' for them and boring, they prefer to do something more inspiring.<sup>237</sup> According to Harris and Morgan<sup>238</sup> and Fagan<sup>239</sup> fathers more often engage in sons' educational issues than in daughters' ones.

If mother involvement in children's lives is a universal phenomenon, father involvement in children's education is definitely culture-based. Lopez,<sup>240</sup> for instance, found that "Spanish-speaking fathers reported more negative perceptions of their child's school, less positive contacts with their child's teachers, and were less involved in their child's school than either English / Spanish-speaking or English-speaking fathers" (p. 61). Interestingly, the fathers in Lopez research emphasized the role of whole family, not just mothers in children's education, so they did not deny their role in children's education, they just rejected

the cooperation between them and schools. Instead of parent-school link, they stress the importance of family and community in the formation of traditional values. Latin Americans, being an involuntary minority in the USA, generally often demonstrate a derogatory attitude towards the formal education of their children that may serve their assimilation, but it especially concerns fathers.<sup>241</sup> Unfortunately, Quiñones and Kiyama<sup>242</sup> state, Latino families', especially fathers', lack of desire to communicate with school administration often is caused by the latter's racist and / or indifferent attitude towards them. Klein,<sup>243</sup> on the other hand, found that Chinese immigrant fathers, being voluntary minorities, were more active in parent-school relationships than European immigrant and American-born fathers, in their contacts with schools. They gather information about the school, interact with teachers and administration, as well as with other parents. They care that their children attend school, fulfil homework and become 'less strangers'.<sup>243</sup> This is why they have an interest in meeting 'American' families.

In the USA fathers' disengagement in family-school communication<sup>244</sup> became such a problem that in 1995 President Bill Clinton issued a memorandum requesting that all executive departments and agencies make a concerted effort to include fathers in their programs, policies, and research programs where appropriate and feasible. The National Household Education Survey of 1996<sup>245</sup> held phone interviews with parents and guardians of over 20,700 children aged 3-17 and found that fathers' lower involvement in their children's school life was caused by:

- 1) Being busy at their workplaces
- 2) Invitations sent to 'families' or mothers, but never to fathers in particular
- 3) Some of them being ashamed to reveal their low level of education
- 4) Lack of knowledge on how they can help their children in educational issues.

Not only culture, but also teacher gender seems to be an issue, at least in certain countries. Unal and Unal<sup>246</sup> study held in Turkey found that 33 teachers (both genders) and 232 fathers state: fathers are more inclined to visit school if the teacher/administrator they meet is a male, as they more easily find a common language with him.

Online communication between schools and families can easily solve the obstacle of being busy as well as the discomfort of meeting face to face female personnel.<sup>247</sup>

In order to provide a higher involvement of fathers in contacts with schools, the problems defined by Levine<sup>248</sup> should be overcome:

Schools should initiate fathers' involvement, to relieve them from fear of being misunderstood

Staff meeting fathers should be represented by administrators and teachers of both genders, where feasible

Mothers should stimulate / permit fathers (married/in civil marriage/divorced) to be involved

## Method

The research held was empirical and involved a questionnaire on father involvement in PTO. The questionnaire involved two personal questions in multiple-choice format (which category of

the focus group the respondent belongs and his/her residence), five content questions in a 5-point Likert scale-like format and four multiple choice content items. The participation was anonymous and voluntary. The questionnaire was placed on Facebook, so anybody from the focus group (school teachers and administrators, and school children's caretakers – all living in Georgia) could volunteer to participate. As Survey Monkey and the like programs permit only English (or a language using Latin alphabet), Besides the Survey monkey link, the questionnaire text was also uploaded in Georgian, and, while filling it out, the respondent could use the Georgian text for better understanding. The researcher asked her more than 500 Facebook friends to share the questionnaire, which some of them did. The questionnaire was on the Facebook for 4 months, which is quite a long period, to permit to involve more participants. However, the respondents were not too numerous.

## Participants

The 175 participants were from various parts of Georgia – the capital (42.9%), from urban (35.4%) and rural parts (21.7%) of the country. There were 153 (87.4%) females and 22 (12.6%) males among the participants. As for the respondents' relation to the children, 14.3% were public school administrators, 54.3% - public school teachers, 1.4% - private school administrators, 1.4% - private school teachers, 25.8% - parents, and 2.9% - fathers (who stated they attend school meetings). It is possible to notice that the most numerous group of the respondents involves public school teachers. It probably means that they are especially concerned with the problem set in the questionnaire.

Of course, for the population of Georgia 175 respondents is a very modest number and it is difficult to speak about a representative sample. The reason is that the topic is very delicate and too many people believe (as it will be seen from the answers) that it is a sort of an alien approach (of course, school-to-family relations have to be the relations between school teachers and administration, on the one hand, and a mother or another female relative, on the other!). Besides, there were very few male respondents, in particular, fathers, which, unfortunately, is natural, by the same reason. However, certain conclusions can be withdrawn from these data, if we add personal observations during many years (as they do not contradict the obtained results).

## Results and discussion

The results are presented in the table 1 below.

- 1 - unaware
- 2 - never
- 3 – almost never
- 4 - seldom
- 5 – regularly (Tables 1 & 2)

These results reveal that fathers seldom attend school; those respondents who chose answers "never" or "almost never" (22.8% of the respondents), state that another male relative almost never (33%) or seldom (40%) attends school. This means that not only fathers, but also grandfathers or uncles seldom attend school meetings.

On the other hand, we cannot keep only fathers responsible for that. School never (34.4%) or seldom (45.7%) contacts fathers personally via electronic devices, invites them to special events



(35.5% and 41.2%) or at least invites both parents to special events (35.3% and 41.2%).

The results of this table show that, when father is in contact with school, this is basically due to physical impossibility for the mother to do so (she is dead or has a disability – 22.9%, or she is abroad – 22.9%). Only 20% of the respondents mentioned that this is due to the fact of father's active involvement in child's upbringing. But even this number is inspiring. It gives hopes that, if relevant measures are taken by school, their number may increase.

45.7% of the respondents believe that fathers do not attend school meetings, as they are too busy. However, 27.7% of the respondents

believe that they might have more often contact school, had the latter demanded is from them directly.

85% of the respondents mention that when the child has some disciplinary problems, s/he prefers that mother goes to school (probably, because they expect fathers to punish them more strictly or to be angrier).

77.1% of the respondents stated that fathers get information about their children's life at school from mothers, seldom from the teacher (8.57%) and still fewer respondents chose the answer "from the child", which shows that fathers are not close enough to children in the issues of their school life.

**Table 1** Likert scale item results

#	Item	1	2	3	4	5
3	How often do fathers attend school meetings with parents?	2.90%	5.70%	17.10%	74.30%	0%
4	If the answer is "never" or "almost never", how often does another male relative (grandfather, uncle, step-father, etc.) attend school meetings? (out of 22.8%)	6.70%	20%	33.30%	40%	0%
5	How often does school request / offer fathers to communicate with it via electronic means (e-mail, mobile phone) on their own initiative?	2.90%	31.40%	17.10%	45.70%	2.90%
6	How often does school invite fathers to participate in special school events (Fathers' Meetings, Father's Day)?	2.90%	35.30%	20.60%	41.20%	0%
7	How often does school invite both parents to participate in special school to family events (sports competitions, planting trees, etc.)?	2.90%	20%	28.60%	45.70%	2.90%

**Table 2** Multiple choice item results

		a	b	c	d	e	f
8	If / when a father is in contact with school, it is because:	22.90%	22.90%	11.40%	17.10%	20%	5.70%
9	What reasons do fathers, who are invited to school, give for not coming?	45.70%	0%	22.90%	27.70%	5.70%	-
10	If the child has violated discipline, who does he / she prefer to go to school?	2.90%	85.70%	11.40%	0%	-	-
11	How does father get information about the child's school life?	5.70%	77.10%	8.57%	8.57%	-	-

## Limitations

As mentioned above, the sample quantitatively is not representative enough. As for its composition, except fathers who attend school meetings, who constitute really a little group in the population of Georgia, all other interested parties are well represented.

The limited number of the respondents is related to the difficulty of reaching respondents, uninvolved position of many fathers not only in PTO, but also in discussion of issues dealing with their role in their children's education, as well as the delicacy of the question under study.

## Conclusion

The research held showed that fathers are insufficiently involved in their children's school lives, which is largely due to the widely spread opinion that this is mother's duty (22.9% of the respondents gave that as the reason of fathers not coming to school meetings). Even the electronic devices which enable them contact the school when they are busy do not rescue the situation. The goal of this article certainly was not to blame fathers or schools for the status quo, but to find ways to improve the situation. One of the ways is for the society to inform fathers through various media how important their participation in their children's education is. Here a great role belongs to journalists who should inform public about scientific studies on the issue, on the one hand, and concrete cases,

on the other. Another way is that schools take measures to involve fathers in their children's school life, and not just due to disciplinary violations, which is often the case, but for positive events as well (such as Father's day or family competitions) ([Appendix 1](#)).

Ramazan Gochtu. Proceedings of International Conference on Research in Education and Science (ICRES), May 19-22, 2016, Bodrum, Turkey, pp. 951-977

## Father's role in sons' and daughters' upbringing

### Abstract

Traditionally mothers' role has been emphasized in child care, upbringing and his / her adult life. However, although fathers may really spend less time with their children, they have a crucial role in both sons' and daughters' mental, emotional, and social development. When father's role in the family and child's life is underestimated, or when father is simply present in the family, but withdrawn from children's upbringing, this can bring about very negative consequences. The goal of the paper is, on the one hand, to find out what people from various countries think about the role that father has had in their lives, and, on the other hand, to suggest the ways to reach a better father involvement in upbringing his children. A definition of fatherhood will be given. A questionnaire survey was held in Georgia and Turkey with people of different age categories (teenagers, young adults, middle-aged and old

respondents) finding out the degree of importance of father in a person's life, his contribution to the child's knowledge, skills, motivation to learn and work, choice of profession, interests, self-confidence, gender images and orientation, feeling secure, etc. A cross-gender and cross-cultural comparison of answers will be offered. Both the literature review and the analysis of the questionnaire will expectedly reveal the great importance of fathers in child's formation and further life. The research has not only sociological, but also pedagogical value. Recommendations to parents and teachers working with parents will be offered, concerning fathers' behavior with his son(s) and daughter(s), his communication / parenting style, ways to stimulate the child's development, raise his/her self-confidence as a person and as a representative of their gender, etc. The importance of fathers' involvement in school-family relationships will be defined.

**Keywords:** fatherhood, mental, emotional, and social development, parents-to-school cooperation

## Introduction

To underline the importance of the topic under study and the role of father, let us view some quotes dealing with it.

"I cannot think of any need in childhood as strong as the need for a father's protection". Sigmund Freud.<sup>248</sup>

"Father! – to God himself we cannot give a holier name". – William Wordsworth<sup>249</sup>

"The father who does not teach his son his duties is equally guilty with the son who neglects them". – Confucius<sup>250</sup>

"There are fathers who do not love their children; there is no grandfather who does not adore his grandson". Victor Hugo.<sup>251</sup>

Engle and Leonard<sup>252</sup> mention that "while women's lives have been characterized primarily in terms of motherhood, men's lives have been characterized largely without reference to fatherhood."

A father can be defined in narrowly biological terms as the man who contributes half of a child's genetic material indeed, many men throughout history have restricted their fathering role to this reproductive function. But fatherhood, like motherhood, is usually understood to embrace a broader range of parenting functions. These may include direct activities e.g., feeding, cleaning, playing, holding, showing affection, teaching, socializing, disciplining, and modeling appropriate behavior and indirect activities that benefit children e.g., providing economic resources, shelter, and protection and offering emotional support to the mother.<sup>252</sup>

Traditionally mothers' role has been emphasized in child care, upbringing and his / her adult life. This approach has natural reasons: mother begins with physical and emotional prenatal relationships with the baby, she gives birth to the child and spends a lot of time with it, especially in the first months of the child's life. Later on mothers often stay at home in order to look after kids, but even those mothers who work out of home, usually have more responsibilities dealing with child care than fathers. They still dedicate more time to communication with children, take children to and from school, control their success at school, etc. On the other hand, in contemporary society where husband's and wife's roles are no longer as different as they used to be, father involvement in child raising and development has been steadily increasing. Although fathers still spend less time with kids, many

of them have warm, actively involved relations with their children. To say nothing about those traditional families, in which father contributed a lot to child's education and character formation. In the 1970s occurred what Lamb<sup>253</sup> called an 'era of paternal rediscovery'. Father's role as that of power (economic support, role model, especially, for male children, protection and problem-solving) has always been recognized, however, there are certain changes in this respect nowadays, when women's role in funding the family has been increasing for at least half a century.

For too long, references to "families" meant "mothers." The result? Fathers receded into the background in their importance to the child and his or her mother, except as a source of financial support. To correct this imbalance...[we must] reach schools and community-based organizations and... raise their awareness of the barriers they place in the way of father involvement.<sup>254</sup>

Compared to the topics such as absence of father or financial involvement of divorced or non-married father and their impact on the child development, which are beyond the scope of this paper, as they have been thoroughly enough investigated, the issue of responsible fatherhood, although really important, has not been very much investigated. The presented research has been undertaken to show that father involvement is / should not be limited to simple presence in the family and financial support.

## Literature review

According to Nettle study,<sup>255</sup> which has followed a cohort of children born in 1958 to now, showed that children whose father spends time with them, in terms of reading or going on outings, have higher IQs and were more socially mobile than those who had received little attention; the differences in life chances were still detectable by the age of 42.

Engle and Leonard<sup>252</sup> state that a review of ethnographic studies in 186 societies reports that in only 2 percent of the societies do fathers have close relationships with their infant children, and 5% - with their pre-school children. An exception is fathers among the Aka pygmies (the southern Central African Republic and the northern Republic of the Congo) and Swedish fathers. Normally fathers more often interact with older children, however, here there also exist exceptions - India, Kenya, Nepal, and among Puerto Ricans in the United States. In China, on the other hand, it is believed that men are no good to provide any care to infants. But new fathers attend prenatal classes with their wives, are present at childbirth, and participate in child care and upbringing at all stages. This movement is spreading all over the world, including, for instance, not only such western countries as the UK, but also such oriental countries as China. Father involvement in childcare depends on his age, socio-economic status, gender role views, culture, his relationships with the child's mother and just on his character. This is a separate big topic, so it is not included in this paper. Another important, but vast topic not included in the paper is the possible problems caused by the active involvement of father in childcare. Irrespective certain possible problems, the impact of father involvement is mostly positive. For instance, studies in the United States have shown that infants whose fathers are highly involved with them score higher on preschool intelligence tests than infants whose fathers are less involved. Besides the educational aspect, these children are more successful in their social relations and are characterized by emotional well-being.<sup>252</sup>

According to Lamb, Pleck, Charnov, and Levine,<sup>256</sup> it is necessary to differentiate between the terms engagement, availability and

responsibility. In their view, engagement entails the father's direct interaction or contact with his child through caregiving and shared activities. Availability concerns the father's potential availability for interaction, by virtue of being present or being ready to respond to child's initiatives. Responsibility emphasizes child care and providing the corresponding resources. This paper is dedicated to responsible fathers, whatever the generation and the culture.

According to Hirsch,<sup>257</sup> responsible fathers "actively share with the child's mother in emotional and psychological care of the child." They "teach responsible behavior, instill character values, teach citizenship, and teach by positive example". They also are aware of their child's interests and values.

Gadsden & Rethemeyer<sup>254</sup> speak about father's within-family and extra-family management roles: organizing a play-ground at home and taking the child to sports or doing some sports or other recreational activities together.

The image of the Euro-American father as sensitive, involved and nurturant<sup>258,259</sup> has become "universal" yardstick, however, the role of culture in the defining of father's role is essential, this is why, as Nsamenang<sup>260</sup> from Cameroon righteously mentions, it is very important to study father roles in various cultures. He describes, for example, that the traditional role of Cameroonian father as less specified, compared to the role not only of mother, but even to child-to-child caretaking. In traditional sun-Saharan communities the role of the whole community is no less important than the role of the direct family, so fathers have a more indirect impact on the formation of their children – though their roles of care for the children of the community in general.

Cameroon, like most sub-Saharan Africa, is a male-dominated society that puts women in a subordinate position to men, although some communities reserve some leadership statuses, like the queen mother and the queen of fertility, to women.<sup>260</sup> Thus, a Cameroonian father, who does not interfere in the kitchen matters, has a crucial role in problem solving, decision making, and protection. He has to be an esteemed member of community and a sample for his children. Cameroonian fathers, even when absent, are an important link between children and the social network of kin and neighbors.

Irrespective the Euro-American father image as sensitive, involved and nurturant, Butler<sup>261</sup> research revealed that a great many of fathers view their role through "being there" (i.e., nurturing and providing financially for their children) rather than directly participating in children's games, free time, education and character formation.

Although fathers tend to treat daughters differently than they treat their sons (protect daughters and stimulate sons' achievement), according to Levant,<sup>262</sup> fathers have a potent influence on the sex role adoption of both their sons and daughters. It is necessary to note that father impact on daughter is changing with the social changes in society.

The pathos of this article is that state as an institution has responsibilities in front of children and cannot completely rely on parents alone who sometimes are, due to various reasons, unable to provide the necessary care for children. Governments and non-governmental institutions should provide support to fathers in their efforts to fulfil honestly their duty of fatherhood.

Parental Involvement (PI) programs have existed at schools since the 1990s, however, they normally stressed mothers' participation.

Nowadays efforts are made to involve fathers more actively in relationships with the schools where their children study. Taking into consideration their busy schedule, this is done on several levels: provision of written educational material prepared by teachers and counselors for parents, meetings and parental participation in school and classes.<sup>263</sup>

Schools should become one of the important instruments of educating fathers to become responsible ones and to really benefit their children. All schools can ask: Are we father-friendly? Do dads feel welcome in our schools?

Do we engage fathers as supporters of their children's learning? Various school competitions, from cooking to sports, with fathers' involvement may be held. Such original school events for fathers and sons as 'non-smoking parties' are offered by Fletcher.<sup>264</sup> Some school-based programs provide not only girls, but also boys with hands-on experience caring for children, which allows them to gain a more realistic view of parenthood and family life. Hughes and Fisher<sup>265</sup> describe the Daddy Cool programme at a Sure Start Children's Centre in Southampton, which has developed Saturday morning breakfast clubs for male carers and their children. It has a special magazine for fathers, and runs a weekly five-a-side football game for them as well as other activities. The result is a large increase in the number of dads at the centre, learning about childcare, first aid, debt management and a host of other issues vital to the lives of their children. There are a range of paper-based resources that schools could have available – the Dad Pack<sup>266</sup> or the Fathers Factsheet.<sup>267</sup> Advice to staff is also downloadable from SCIE, who have produced a summarized literature review. Outcomes from the Recognising Fathers research project are also available via the internet.<sup>268</sup> Countries which do not have such original resources could translate the existing ones, for the beginning.

In the 2000s in the US foundations for supporting fatherhood were created. The Administration for Children and Families began doling out the first of three installments of \$50 million annually over five years to programs and initiatives implementing creative father involvement activities. These funds, made available for innovative projects promoting responsible fatherhood, are a demonstration of the commitment we need to sustain in years to come for the sake of our children.<sup>269</sup> According to Drummond & Reich,<sup>270</sup> such foundations can:

- 1) support local public-awareness campaigns that promote responsible fatherhood.
- 2) sponsor Father's Day events and other free social gatherings for fathers and children.
- 3) educate businesses, schools, and social service agencies about how to make their programs more father-friendly.

Studies in Cameroon and the United States suggest that education of fathers, combined with interactive experience, can strengthen father-child bonds.<sup>252</sup> The provision of paternity leave and flex time for fathers is an important step in promoting fathers' involvement with their children. Recognition of the need for paternity leave policies has spread beyond Europe and North America: in Tanzania the national family planning association, UMATI, has recommended leave time for new fathers, noting that it would "enable fathers to support their wives during and after delivery. Studies in the United States and Sweden show, however,



that, where these policies exist, fewer than 10 percent of men avail themselves of them.

A 1986 study revealed that 90 percent of companies in the United States that allowed men to take time off when a child is born referred to the policy as "personal leave" and made no attempt to inform new fathers that this time could be used as paternity leave. In Sweden, where paternity leave policies have existed for some time, employers often take a negative attitude toward male employees who take paternity leave.<sup>252</sup>

Mass media, movies and advertisement can / should also contribute to fathers' awareness of their children's lives. Many political figures and celebrities nowadays appear on the TV screen with their kids, to promote themselves, on the one hand, but, on the other hand, to enhance the positive image of a caring father.

A resource The Dad Pack ([www.dad.info](http://www.dad.info)) was produced by Fathers Direct.<sup>266</sup> The pack is a basic toolkit for organizations to use in supporting dads in being, and becoming, more involved with their children. It covers issues such as pregnancy, birth, work, relationships, health, benefits, legal rights and responsibilities, and how to praise children.<sup>266</sup>

In Turkey much attention is paid to parents' involvement in the process of their children's education as well as parents' pedagogical-psychological education. Parents in many private schools are required to attend classes dealing with pedagogical and psychological issues of efficient parenting. Fathers normally play a big role in children's upbringing. Guven (2011) held a research concerning parents' pedagogical and psychological training.

Three teachers and 52 parents of students who are taught by these teachers were involved. A three week program was carried out, with two teachers and their students' parents as experimental group and a teacher and his/her students' parents as control group. The study found that the parents from the experimental groups

were quite happy with the program and would be glad to go on with such projects.

## Method

It is important to underline that this research is of interdisciplinary nature, as it deals with social, psychological and pedagogical aspects of family relationships. However, such issues as socio-economic status of the family are not touched in it and will be in the focus of another study. Here, general human attitudes and views are studied.

The research is a quantitative one, as the suggested in the questionnaire items had to be assessed by the respondents in Likert scale (from 1- completely disagree to 5 – completely agree).

## Questionnaire

The questionnaire was chosen as the tool for measurement of attitudes and beliefs. It was developed both based on the literature analysis (items appearing there) and personal experience. It involves 56 items grouped for analysis purposes in 14 categories (the importance of father's role, typicality of the respondent's father for the given culture, father as decision maker, father as a human / professional / gender model, etc.). Not to provoke thoughtless answers, some questions are in positive, while others are in negative format, as well as they express both positive and negative ideas about fathers, so the respondents cannot guess what conclusions the researcher is driving at. The questionnaire was translated into Georgian and Turkish, to provide the comprehension of the respondents.

Some practically duplicating questions were embedded in the questionnaire (e.g. 7 & 41; 6 & 56; 41 & 43). If the respondent's answers to these questions differed by more than 1 point, the questionnaire filled in by that respondent was discarded, as the answers were viewed as unreliable. Totally 5 respondents' answers were discarded, due to this factor or when in one answer sheet answers to some items were missing. (Tables 3 to 30).

**Table 3** The importance of father's role (q. 1, 52, 32)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 1. My father's role in my life is/was less than my mother's	26.3% $\times$ 1	35.5% $\times$ 1	9.5% $\times$ 1	52.0% $\times$ 1	40.0% $\times$ 1	18.0% $\times$ 1	20.8% $\times$ 1	17.4% $\times$ 1
	31.5% $\times$ 2	17.7% $\times$ 2	66.7% $\times$ 2	24.0% $\times$ 2	28.6% $\times$ 2	31.1% $\times$ 2	12.5% $\times$ 2	21.7% $\times$ 2
	26.3% $\times$ 3	19.4% $\times$ 3	9.5% $\times$ 3	16.0% $\times$ 3	11.4% $\times$ 3	24.6% $\times$ 3	29.2% $\times$ 3	26.1% $\times$ 3
	18.4% $\times$ 4	16.1% $\times$ 4	14.3% $\times$ 4	8.0% $\times$ 4	11.4% $\times$ 4	19.7% $\times$ 4	16.7% $\times$ 4	26.1% $\times$ 4
	21.1% $\times$ 5	12.9% $\times$ 5			8.60%	6.6% $\times$ 5	8.3% $\times$ 5	8.7% $\times$ 5
	Mean=2.76	Mean=2.54	Mean=2.29	Mean=1.80	Mean=2.44	Mean=2.66	Mean=2.76	Mean=2.87
q.52. My father is/was one of the most important people in my life	10.5% $\times$ 1	4.8% $\times$ 1	9.5% $\times$ 1	4.0% $\times$ 1	2.9% $\times$ 1	9.84% $\times$ 1	4.2% $\times$ 1	10.3% $\times$ 1
	2.6% $\times$ 2	6.5% $\times$ 2	9.5% $\times$ 2	12.0% $\times$ 2	14.3% $\times$ 2	11.48% $\times$ 2	4.2% $\times$ 2	17.4.% $\times$ 2
	13.2% $\times$ 3	25.8% $\times$ 3	9.5% $\times$ 3	48.0% $\times$ 3	40.0% $\times$ 3	26.23% $\times$ 3	37.5% $\times$ 3	26.1% $\times$ 3
	18.4% $\times$ 4	24.2% $\times$ 4	66.7% $\times$ 4	28.0% $\times$ 4	17.1% $\times$ 4	37.70% $\times$ 4	33.3% $\times$ 4	26.2% $\times$ 4
	55.3% $\times$ 5	40.3% $\times$ 5	4.8% $\times$ 5	8.0% $\times$ 5	25.7% $\times$ 5	14.75% $\times$ 5	20.8% $\times$ 5	17.4% $\times$ 5
	Mean=4.05	Mean=3.87	Mean=3.48	Mean=3.24	Mean=4.88	Mean=3.36	Mean=3.62	Mean=3.17
q.32. If my father's and my mother's opinions differ, I always (often) agree with my father	31.6% $\times$ 1	22.6% $\times$ 1	14.3% $\times$ 1		2.9% $\times$ 1	9.83% $\times$ 1	8.3% $\times$ 1	17.4% $\times$ 1
	36.8% $\times$ 2	21.0% $\times$ 2	33.3% $\times$ 2	24.0% $\times$ 2	14.3.% $\times$ 2	26.2% $\times$ 2	29.1% $\times$ 2	17.4% $\times$ 2
	18.4% $\times$ 3	22.6% $\times$ 3	14.3% $\times$ 3	28.0% $\times$ 3	45.7% $\times$ 3	39.3% $\times$ 3	25.0% $\times$ 3	26.1% $\times$ 3
	5.3% $\times$ 4	19.4% $\times$ 4	28.6% $\times$ 4	35.0% $\times$ 4	17.1% $\times$ 4	18.0% $\times$ 4	16.7% $\times$ 4	21.9% $\times$ 4
	7.9% $\times$ 5	16.1% $\times$ 5	9.5% $\times$ 5	12.0% $\times$ 5	20.0% $\times$ 5	6.6% $\times$ 5	20.8% $\times$ 5	8.7% $\times$ 5
	Mean=2.21	Mean=2.86	Mean=2.86	Mean=3.36	Mean=3.76	Mean=2.85	Mean=3.13	Mean=2.97

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

**Table 4** Father's role is typical for the culture (q. 14, 53)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 14. My relationships with my father are typical enough in my country.	2.6% $\times$ 1	6.35% $\times$ 1	4.76% $\times$ 1			8.20% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	4.35% $\times$ 1
	18.4% $\times$ 2	25.40% $\times$ 2	14.28% $\times$ 2	28.0% $\times$ 2	25.71% $\times$ 2	11.47% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2	21.74% $\times$ 2
	18.4% $\times$ 3	25.40% $\times$ 3	38.10% $\times$ 3	20.0% $\times$ 3	28.57% $\times$ 3	21.31% $\times$ 3	29.16% $\times$ 3	26.07% $\times$ 3
	47.5% $\times$ 4	27.0% $\times$ 4	23.81% $\times$ 4	32.0% $\times$ 4	28.57% $\times$ 4	45.54% $\times$ 4	33.33% $\times$ 4	30.43% $\times$ 4
	13.15% $\times$ 5	15.85% $\times$ 5	19.05% $\times$ 5	20.0% $\times$ 5	17.14% $\times$ 5	11.47% $\times$ 5	20.83% $\times$ 5	17.40% $\times$ 5
	Mean=3.50	Mean=3.19	Mean=3.38	Mean=3.12	Mean=3.37	Mean=3.43	Mean=3.17	Mean=3.18
q. 53. My father is a typical representative of his culture.		7.94% $\times$ 1	4.76% $\times$ 1	8.0% $\times$ 1	11.43% $\times$ 1	1.63% $\times$ 1		8.70% $\times$ 1
	10.5% $\times$ 2	6.35% $\times$ 2	19.05% $\times$ 2	4.0% $\times$ 2	11.43% $\times$ 2	13.11% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2	17.40% $\times$ 2
	55.2% $\times$ 3	17.46% $\times$ 3	23.81% $\times$ 3	12.0% $\times$ 3	20.0% $\times$ 3	26.23% $\times$ 3	20.83% $\times$ 3	34.78% $\times$ 3
	13.2% $\times$ 4	43.13% $\times$ 4	33.33% $\times$ 4	52.0% $\times$ 4	37.14% $\times$ 4	31.15% $\times$ 4	62.5% $\times$ 4	26.08% $\times$ 4
	21.1% $\times$ 5	25.40% $\times$ 5	19.05% $\times$ 5	24.0% $\times$ 5	20.0% $\times$ 5	27.87% $\times$ 5	8.33% $\times$ 5	8.33% $\times$ 5
	Mean=3.45	Mean=3.77	Mean=3.43	Mean=3.4	Mean=3.14	Mean=3.70	Mean=3.71	Mean=3.17

**Table 5** Decision making in the family (q. 29, 50)

questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 29. In my family it is the father who makes decisions and solves problems, not the mother.	7.8% $\times$ 1	11.11% $\times$ 1	9.52% $\times$ 1		5.71% $\times$ 1	11.47% $\times$ 1		4.35% $\times$ 1
	34.2% $\times$ 2	31.75% $\times$ 2	19.05% $\times$ 2	16.0% $\times$ 2	34.29% $\times$ 2	16.39% $\times$ 2	4.15% $\times$ 2	4.35% $\times$ 2
	29.0% $\times$ 3	20.63% $\times$ 3	14.28% $\times$ 3	32.0% $\times$ 3	34.29% $\times$ 3	22.95% $\times$ 3	33.33% $\times$ 3	13.04% $\times$ 3
	18.4% $\times$ 4	19.04% $\times$ 4	38.10% $\times$ 4	28.0% $\times$ 4	11.43% $\times$ 4	29.51% $\times$ 4	16.76% $\times$ 4	34.78% $\times$ 4
	10.5% $\times$ 5	17.46% $\times$ 5	19.05% $\times$ 5	24.0% $\times$ 5	14.29% $\times$ 5	18.03% $\times$ 5	45.83% $\times$ 5	43.48% $\times$ 5
	Mean=2.89	Mean=3.05	Mean=3.38	Mean=3.6	Mean=2.94	Mean=3.21	Mean=4.04	Mean=4.08
q. 50. We often make decisions together with my father.	13.30% $\times$ 1	4.76% $\times$ 1	4.76% $\times$ 1		2.86% $\times$ 1	3.30% $\times$ 1	12.5% $\times$ 1	9.0% $\times$ 1
	5.30% $\times$ 2	12.70% $\times$ 2	38.10% $\times$ 2		5.71% $\times$ 2	9.83% $\times$ 2	4.16% $\times$ 2	18.0% $\times$ 2
	21.05% $\times$ 3	27.0% $\times$ 3	4.76% $\times$ 3	36.0% $\times$ 3	22.86% $\times$ 3	22.95% $\times$ 3	37.5% $\times$ 3	27.0% $\times$ 3
	44.93% $\times$ 4	27.0% $\times$ 4	42.86% $\times$ 4	20.0% $\times$ 4	31.43% $\times$ 4	42.63% $\times$ 4	41.57% $\times$ 4	37.5% $\times$ 4
	15.7% $\times$ 5	28.57% $\times$ 5	9.52% $\times$ 5	44.0% $\times$ 5	37.14% $\times$ 5	21.31% $\times$ 5	4.16% $\times$ 5	9.0% $\times$ 5
	Mean=3.45	Mean=3.68	Mean=3.14	Mean=4.08	Mean=3.89	Mean=3.69	Mean=3.21	Mean=3.22

**Table 6** Father as a human / professional model (q. 17, 21)

questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
17. I am proud of my father as a person and as a professional.	2.63% $\times$ 1	6.35% $\times$ 1	4.76% $\times$ 1			3.30% $\times$ 1	4.16% $\times$ 1	
	5.26% $\times$ 2			4% $\times$ 2	11.43% $\times$ 2	4.91% $\times$ 2		8.70% $\times$ 2
	10.52% $\times$ 3	20.63% $\times$ 3	19.05% $\times$ 3	8% $\times$ 3	17.14% $\times$ 3	11.47% $\times$ 3	8.33% $\times$ 3	13.04% $\times$ 3
	39.47% $\times$ 4	30.16% $\times$ 4	28.56% $\times$ 4	36% $\times$ 4	25.71% $\times$ 4	49.18% $\times$ 4	54.17% $\times$ 4	39.13% $\times$ 4
	42.10% $\times$ 5	43.13% $\times$ 5	47.62% $\times$ 5	52% $\times$ 5	45.71% $\times$ 5	31.15% $\times$ 5	33.33% $\times$ 5	39.13% $\times$ 5
	Mean=4.13	Mean=4.03	Mean=4.14	Mean=4.36	Mean=4.06	Mean=4.0	Mean=4.13	Mean=4.09
21. I will choose / have chosen my father's profession / occupation (or a related one).	44.73% $\times$ 1	38.10% $\times$ 1	19.05% $\times$ 1	12% $\times$ 1	14.29% $\times$ 1	29.51% $\times$ 1	29.19% $\times$ 1	13.04% $\times$ 1
	34.21% $\times$ 2	30.16% $\times$ 2	47.62% $\times$ 2	28% $\times$ 2	14.29% $\times$ 2	32.79% $\times$ 2	29.16% $\times$ 2	21.74% $\times$ 2
	13.15% $\times$ 3	14.29% $\times$ 3	23.81% $\times$ 3	36% $\times$ 3	22.86% $\times$ 3	14.75% $\times$ 3	16.76% $\times$ 3	30.43% $\times$ 3
	5.26% $\times$ 4	9.52% $\times$ 4		12% $\times$ 4	22.86% $\times$ 4	6.55% $\times$ 4	8.33% $\times$ 4	30.43% $\times$ 4
	2.63% $\times$ 5	7.94% $\times$ 5	9.52% $\times$ 5	12% $\times$ 5	25.71% $\times$ 5	16.39% $\times$ 5	16.76% $\times$ 5	4.35% $\times$ 5
	Mean=1.87	Mean=2.19	Mean=2.33	Mean=2.84	Mean=3.31	Mean=2.48	Mean=2.54	Mean=2.91

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

**Table 7** Father as a gender model / his impact on gender role formation (q. 18, 25, 34, 35)

Questions	Males, aged							
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 18. My father has always been an exemplary MAN for me (I have always wanted to be like him – for male respondents; I have always wanted to meet a man like him – for female respondents).	5.26% <sup>x1</sup>	14.29% <sup>x1</sup>		4% <sup>x1</sup>	8.6% <sup>x1</sup>	6.55% <sup>x1</sup>	4.16% <sup>x1</sup>	13.04% <sup>x1</sup>
	18.42% <sup>x2</sup>	14.29% <sup>x2</sup>	4.76% <sup>x2</sup>	4% <sup>x2</sup>	25.71% <sup>x2</sup>	4.91% <sup>x2</sup>	8.33% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x3</sup>	22.22% <sup>x3</sup>	19.05% <sup>x3</sup>	32% <sup>x3</sup>	20% <sup>x3</sup>	31.15% <sup>x3</sup>	37.5% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	36.85% <sup>x4</sup>	14.29% <sup>x4</sup>	47.62% <sup>x4</sup>	16% <sup>x4</sup>	14.29% <sup>x4</sup>	27.81% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
	31.58% <sup>x5</sup>	4.92% <sup>x5</sup>	28.56% <sup>x5</sup>	44% <sup>x5</sup>	31.43% <sup>x5</sup>	29.51% <sup>x5</sup>	41.67% <sup>x5</sup>	17.40% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=3.71	Mean=3.41	Mean= 4.00	Mean=3.92	Mean=3.34	Mean=3.69	Mean=3.67	Mean=3.30
25. My father has contributed to the kind of man / woman I will / have become.	2.63% <sup>x1</sup>	6.35% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>			3.30% <sup>x1</sup>		4.35% <sup>x1</sup>
	10.52% <sup>x2</sup>	7.94% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>	8% <sup>x2</sup>	8.6% <sup>x2</sup>	1.63% <sup>x2</sup>	4.16% <sup>x2</sup>	4.35% <sup>x2</sup>
	10.52% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	19.67% <sup>x3</sup>	16.76% <sup>x3</sup>	17.40% <sup>x3</sup>
	28.95% <sup>x4</sup>	31.75% <sup>x4</sup>	23.80% <sup>x4</sup>	48% <sup>x4</sup>	45.71% <sup>x4</sup>	42.62% <sup>x4</sup>	50% <sup>x4</sup>	43.48% <sup>x4</sup>
	47.38% <sup>x5</sup>	44.44% <sup>x5</sup>	52.40% <sup>x5</sup>	36% <sup>x5</sup>	31.43% <sup>x5</sup>	32.79% <sup>x5</sup>	29.16% <sup>x5</sup>	34.78% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=4.07	Mean=4.00	Mean=4.10	Mean=4.12	Mean=4.0	Mean=4.0	Mean=4.04	Mean=4.0
34. (for female respondents from the age of 20). I cannot get married, as no man is good enough for my father.	7.94% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	8.0% <sup>x1</sup>					
	19.04% <sup>x2</sup>	19/05% <sup>x2</sup>	28.0% <sup>x2</sup>					
	19.04% <sup>x3</sup>	19.05% <sup>x3</sup>						
	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	19.05% <sup>x4</sup>						
	20.65% <sup>x5</sup>	19.05% <sup>x5</sup>						
	Mean=2.87	Mean=2.90						
q.35. (for female respondents from the age of 20) I cannot get married, as no man is as good as my father.	12.70% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	24% <sup>x1</sup>					
	27% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>	12% <sup>x2</sup>					
	19.04% <sup>x3</sup>	42.86% <sup>x3</sup>	44% <sup>x3</sup>					
	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	8% <sup>x4</sup>					
	17.46% <sup>x5</sup>	9.52% <sup>x5</sup>	12% <sup>x5</sup>					
	Mean=3.11	Mean=3.33	Mean=2.72					

**Table 8** Father as a Supporter / Protector / Motivator (q.23, 24, 36, 55)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 23. I am not / wasn't afraid of any problems / difficulties, as I am / was always sure that my father will/would help me.	15.79% <sup>x1</sup>	7.94% <sup>x1</sup>	14.28% <sup>x1</sup>		8.6% <sup>x1</sup>	6.55% <sup>x1</sup>	8.33% <sup>x1</sup>	4.35% <sup>x1</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x2</sup>	6.35% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>		2.86% <sup>x2</sup>	6.55% <sup>x2</sup>	4.16% <sup>x2</sup>	8.70% <sup>x2</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x3</sup>	19.04% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	20% <sup>x3</sup>	3.11% <sup>x3</sup>	12.5% <sup>x3</sup>	13.04% <sup>x3</sup>
	23.69% <sup>x4</sup>	31.75% <sup>x4</sup>	19.05% <sup>x4</sup>	40% <sup>x4</sup>	31.43% <sup>x4</sup>	39.34% <sup>x4</sup>	37.5% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
	47.37% <sup>x5</sup>	34.92% <sup>x5</sup>	47.62% <sup>x5</sup>	48% <sup>x5</sup>	37.14% <sup>x5</sup>	34.42% <sup>x5</sup>	37.5% <sup>x5</sup>	43.48% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=3.79	Mean=3.85	Mean=3.86	Mean=4.36	Mean=3.86	Mean=3.89	Mean=3.92	Mean= 4.0
q. 24. My father has / had always supported my efforts ideas, etc.	7.89% <sup>x1</sup>	47.62% <sup>x1</sup>				3.30% <sup>x1</sup>		4.35% <sup>x1</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x2</sup>	6.35% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>		11.43% <sup>x2</sup>	11.47% <sup>x2</sup>	4.16% <sup>x2</sup>	4.35% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	17.46% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	24% <sup>x3</sup>	22.86% <sup>x3</sup>	19.67% <sup>x3</sup>	16.76% <sup>x3</sup>	8.70% <sup>x3</sup>
	28.94% <sup>x4</sup>	36.51% <sup>x4</sup>	42.86% <sup>x4</sup>	44% <sup>x4</sup>	45.71% <sup>x4</sup>	32.79% <sup>x4</sup>	50% <sup>x4</sup>	34.78% <sup>x4</sup>
	44.73% <sup>x5</sup>	34.92% <sup>x5</sup>	38.10% <sup>x5</sup>	32% <sup>x5</sup>	20% <sup>x5</sup>	32.79% <sup>x5</sup>	29.16% <sup>x5</sup>	43.48% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=3.97	Mean=3.97	Mean=4.00	Mean=4.08	Mean=3.74	Mean=3.80	Mean=4.04	Mean=4.04
q. 55. I've done many things in my life as my father motivated me to	5.27% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	4% <sup>x1</sup>	5.71% <sup>x1</sup>			4.35% <sup>x1</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>	8% <sup>x2</sup>	8.6% <sup>x2</sup>	3.30% <sup>x2</sup>	4.16% <sup>x2</sup>	8.70% <sup>x2</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	17.14% <sup>x3</sup>	32.79% <sup>x3</sup>	20.83% <sup>x3</sup>	8.70% <sup>x3</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x4</sup>	28.57% <sup>x4</sup>	19.05% <sup>x4</sup>	28% <sup>x4</sup>	25.71% <sup>x4</sup>	24.59% <sup>x4</sup>	37.5% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
	47.37% <sup>x5</sup>	43.13% <sup>x5</sup>	52.40% <sup>x5</sup>	44% <sup>x5</sup>	42.86% <sup>x5</sup>	39.24% <sup>x5</sup>	37.5% <sup>x5</sup>	52.17% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=4.00	Mean=4.02	Mean=4.05	Mean=4.35	Mean=3.91	Mean= 4.0	Mean=4.17	Mean=4.30



**Table 9** Father as Authority / Advisor (q. 5, 11)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 5. My father is / was a clever man, I always ask / asked questions to him to understand things better.	5.27% $\times$ 1	3.17% $\times$ 1	4.76% $\times$ 1	4% $\times$ 1	5.71% $\times$ 1	3.30% $\times$ 1	4.16% $\times$ 1	
	5.27% $\times$ 2	6.35% $\times$ 2	4.76% $\times$ 2	8% $\times$ 2	14.29% $\times$ 2	11.47% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2	8.70% $\times$ 2
	21.1% $\times$ 3	27% $\times$ 3	14.28% $\times$ 3	8% $\times$ 3	14.29% $\times$ 3	18.03% $\times$ 3	12.5% $\times$ 3	13.04% $\times$ 3
	26.32% $\times$ 4	25.40% $\times$ 4	33.33% $\times$ 4	36% $\times$ 4	31.43% $\times$ 4	32.79% $\times$ 4	16% $\times$ 4	34.78% $\times$ 4
	47.11% $\times$ 5	38.10% $\times$ 5	42.86% $\times$ 5	44% $\times$ 5	34.29% $\times$ 5	34.42% $\times$ 5	45.83% $\times$ 5	43.48% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.89	Mean= 3.95	Mean=4.05	Mean=4.08	Mean= 3.74	Mean=3.83	Mean=4.04	Mean=4.13
q. 11. If I need help / advice, I often ask my father.	7.89% $\times$ 1	7.9% $\times$ 1				6.55% $\times$ 1	4.16% $\times$ 1	
	7.89% $\times$ 2	12.7% $\times$ 2	9.52% $\times$ 2	8% $\times$ 2	25.71% $\times$ 2	8.20% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2	4.35% $\times$ 2
	15.79% $\times$ 3	14.3% $\times$ 3	19.05% $\times$ 3	12% $\times$ 3	8.6% $\times$ 3	14.75% $\times$ 3	4.16% $\times$ 3	8.70% $\times$ 3
	39.47% $\times$ 4	28.6% $\times$ 4	38.10% $\times$ 4	36% $\times$ 4	25.71% $\times$ 4	34.42% $\times$ 4	37.5% $\times$ 4	34.78% $\times$ 4
	28.95% $\times$ 5	35.5% $\times$ 5	33.33% $\times$ 5	44% $\times$ 5	40% $\times$ 5	36.06% $\times$ 5	45.87% $\times$ 5	52.17% $\times$ 5
	Mean=3.74	Mean=3.73	Mean= 3.95	Mean=4.04	Mean= 3.8	Mean=4.01	Mean=4.13	Mean=4.35

**Table 10** Father as educator (q. 4, 45, 46, 48)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 4. My father has contributed importantly to my education.	5.27% $\times$ 1	6.35% $\times$ 1	23.81% $\times$ 1	12% $\times$ 1		6.55% $\times$ 1	16.79% $\times$ 1	8.70% $\times$ 1
	2.63% $\times$ 2	1.59% $\times$ 2	19.05% $\times$ 2	8% $\times$ 2	45.71% $\times$ 2	8.20% $\times$ 2	12.5% $\times$ 2	21.74% $\times$ 2
	2.63% $\times$ 3	6.35% $\times$ 3	4.76% $\times$ 3	12% $\times$ 3	5.71% $\times$ 3	11.47% $\times$ 3	12.5% $\times$ 3	26.08% $\times$ 3
	23.68% $\times$ 4	3.33% $\times$ 4	23.81% $\times$ 4	32% $\times$ 4	25.71% $\times$ 4	39.34% $\times$ 4	20.83% $\times$ 4	34.78% $\times$ 4
	65.79% $\times$ 5	52.38% $\times$ 5	28.56% $\times$ 5	36% $\times$ 5	40% $\times$ 5	34.42% $\times$ 5	37.5% $\times$ 5	8.70% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 4.42	Mean= 4.63	Mean= 3.14	Mean= 3.72	Mean= 3.66	Mean= 3.87	Mean= 3.5	Mean= 3.13
45. My father sometimes (often) reads / read to me before going to bed / when I am / was ill.	31.58% $\times$ 1	28.57% $\times$ 1	23.81% $\times$ 1	28% $\times$ 1	37.14% $\times$ 1	37.70% $\times$ 1	25% $\times$ 1	13.04% $\times$ 1
	26.32% $\times$ 2	23.81% $\times$ 2	47.62% $\times$ 2	16% $\times$ 2	17.14% $\times$ 2	18.03% $\times$ 2	16.76% $\times$ 2	21.74% $\times$ 2
	18.42% $\times$ 3	20.63% $\times$ 3	9.52% $\times$ 3	28% $\times$ 3	20% $\times$ 3	27.87% $\times$ 3	16.76% $\times$ 3	30.43% $\times$ 3
	15.79% $\times$ 4	14.29% $\times$ 4	19.05% $\times$ 4	16% $\times$ 4	5.71% $\times$ 4	11.47% $\times$ 4	41.67% $\times$ 4	26.08% $\times$ 4
	7.89% $\times$ 5	12.70% $\times$ 5		12% $\times$ 5	20% $\times$ 5	4.91% $\times$ 5		8.70% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 2.42	Mean= 2.63	Mean= 2.24	Mean= 2.68	Mean= 2.54	Mean= 1.82	Mean= 2.75	Mean= 2.96
q. 46. My father often recommends / recommended me good reading.	21.1% $\times$ 26	15.88% $\times$ 1	4.76% $\times$ 1			4.91% $\times$	8.33% $\times$ 1	13.04% $\times$ 18.
	7.89% $\times$ 2	7.94% $\times$ 2	9.52% $\times$ 2 2	12% $\times$ 2	20% $\times$ 2	19.67% $\times$ 2	4.16% $\times$ 2	17.40% $\times$ 2
	15.79% $\times$ 3	12.70% $\times$ 3	8.56% $\times$ 3	24% $\times$ 3	8.6% $\times$ 3	19.67% $\times$ 3	25% $\times$ 3	26.08% $\times$ 3
	28.94% $\times$ 4	15.88% $\times$ 4	33.33% $\times$ 4	32% $\times$ 4	37.14% $\times$ 4	37.70% $\times$ 4	37.5% $\times$ 4	34.78% $\times$ 4
	26.32% $\times$ 5	47.62% $\times$ 5	19.05% $\times$ 5	32% $\times$ 5	34.29% $\times$ 5	118.03% $\times$ 5	25% $\times$ 5	70% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.32	Mean= 3.77	Mean= 3.48	Mean= 3.84	Mean= 3.86	Mean= 3.44	Mean= 3.88	Mean= 3.09
q. 48. I like /liked when my father teaches / taught me (to do) various things.	7.89% $\times$ 1	3.17% $\times$ 1	4.76% $\times$ 1			6.55% $\times$ 1 7	4.16% $\times$ 1	8.70% $\times$ 1
	7.89% $\times$ 2	9.52% $\times$ 2	23.81% $\times$ 2	8% $\times$ 24	5.71% $\times$ 2	4.91% $\times$ 2	12.5% $\times$ 2	13.04% $\times$ 2
	15.79% $\times$ 3	17.46% $\times$ 3		8% $\times$ 3	8.6% $\times$ 3	26.23% $\times$ 3	4.16% $\times$ 3	17.40% $\times$ 3
	31.58% $\times$ 4	33.33% $\times$ 4	52.40% $\times$ 4	28% $\times$ 4	25.71% $\times$ 4	39.34% $\times$ 4	62.5% $\times$ 4	34.78% $\times$ 4
	36.84% $\times$ 5	36.51% $\times$ 5	19.05% $\times$ 5	56% $\times$ 5	60% $\times$ 5	22.95% $\times$ 5	16.76% $\times$ 5	26.08% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.82	Mean= 4.03	Mean= 3.57	Mean= 4.2	Mean= 4.31	Mean= 3.6	Mean= 3.75	Mean= 3.57

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

**Table 11** Father as upbringer (the person who has influenced purposefully character formation (q. 6, 56)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 6. My father has contributed importantly to my character formation (upbringing).	10.53% <sup>x1</sup>	1.59% <sup>x1</sup>	14.28% <sup>x1</sup>	12% <sup>x1</sup>	2.86% <sup>x1</sup>	11.47% <sup>x1</sup>	12.5% <sup>x1</sup>	8.70% <sup>x1</sup>
	2.63% <sup>x2</sup>	6.35% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>	4% <sup>x2</sup>	17.14% <sup>x2</sup>	9.83% <sup>x2</sup>		17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>		11.43% <sup>x3</sup>	9.83% <sup>x3</sup>	12.5% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x4</sup>	36.51% <sup>x4</sup>	28.56% <sup>x4</sup>	52% <sup>x4</sup>	28.57% <sup>x4</sup>	40.98% <sup>x4</sup>	29.16% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
	47.37% <sup>x5</sup>	41.27% <sup>x5</sup>	33.33% <sup>x5</sup>	32% <sup>x5</sup>	40% <sup>x5</sup>	27.87% <sup>x5</sup>	45.83% <sup>x5</sup>	17.40% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.94	Mean= 4.16	Mean=3.57	Mean= 3.88	Mean= 3.86	Mean= 3.64	Mean= 3.96	Mean= 3.30
q. 56. My father has contributed to the formation of my values, as he has often discussed them with me.	5.27% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	9.52% <sup>x1</sup>			4.91% <sup>x1</sup>		8.70% <sup>x1</sup>
	2.63% <sup>x2</sup>	14.29% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>	16% <sup>x2</sup>	8.6% <sup>x2</sup>	6.55% <sup>x2</sup>	12.5% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	31.58% <sup>x3</sup>	15.88% <sup>x3</sup>	23.81% <sup>x3</sup>	4% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	37.70% <sup>x3</sup>	25% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	26.32% <sup>x4</sup>	19.04% <sup>x4</sup>	42.86% <sup>x4</sup>	28% <sup>x4</sup>	28.57% <sup>x4</sup>	29.51% <sup>x4</sup>	37.5% <sup>x4</sup>	34.78% <sup>x4</sup>
	34.21% <sup>x5</sup>	46.03% <sup>x5</sup>	14.28% <sup>x5</sup>	52% <sup>x5</sup>	48.57% <sup>x5</sup>	21.31% <sup>x5</sup>	25% <sup>x5</sup>	13.04% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.82	Mean=3.94	Mean=3.43	Mean=4.16	Mean=4.17	Mean=3.89	Mean=3.75	Mean=3.26

**Table 12** Father as a Friend / Person to spend time / Share ideas with (q. 7, 8, 12, 22, 41, 42, 43)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 7. Whenever my father spends / spent time with me, it makes / made me happy.	7.89% <sup>x1</sup>	1.59% <sup>x1</sup>				6.55% <sup>x1</sup>	4.16% <sup>x1</sup>	4.35% <sup>x1</sup>
	2.63% <sup>x2</sup>	3.17% <sup>x2</sup>	4.76% <sup>x2</sup>	4% <sup>x2</sup>	2.86% <sup>x2</sup>	4.91% <sup>x2</sup>	4.16% <sup>x2</sup>	8.70% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x3</sup>	19.04% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	13.11% <sup>x3</sup>	4.16% <sup>x3</sup>	8.70% <sup>x3</sup>
	31.59% <sup>x4</sup>	30.16% <sup>x4</sup>	42.86% <sup>x4</sup>	56% <sup>x4</sup>	48.57% <sup>x4</sup>	37.70% <sup>x4</sup>	50% <sup>x4</sup>	34.78% <sup>x4</sup>
	50% <sup>x5</sup>	46.03% <sup>x5</sup>	42.86% <sup>x5</sup>	32% <sup>x5</sup>	34.29% <sup>x5</sup>	39.34% <sup>x5</sup>	37.5% <sup>x5</sup>	43.48% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 4.13	Mean= 4.24	Mean= 4.23	Mean= 4.16	Mean= 4.14	Mean= 4.03	Mean= 4.13	Mean= 4.04
q. 8. We often go / went together to places like stadium, park, relatives, friends, etc.	7.89% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	4% <sup>x1</sup>	5.71% <sup>x1</sup>	14.75% <sup>x1</sup>	4.16% <sup>x1</sup>	8.70% <sup>x1</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x2</sup>	19.04% <sup>x2</sup>	28.56% <sup>x2</sup>	4% <sup>x2</sup>	17.14% <sup>x2</sup>	19.67% <sup>x2</sup>	12.5% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	55.26% <sup>x3</sup>	41.27% <sup>x3</sup>	28.56% <sup>x3</sup>	52% <sup>x3</sup>	54.29% <sup>x3</sup>	24.59% <sup>x3</sup>	45.83% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	21.10% <sup>x4</sup>	20.63% <sup>x4</sup>	28.56% <sup>x4</sup>	28% <sup>x4</sup>	14.29% <sup>x4</sup>	29.51% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	39.13% <sup>x4</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x5</sup>	14.29% <sup>x5</sup>	9.52% <sup>x5</sup>	8% <sup>x5</sup>	8.6% <sup>x5</sup>	11.47% <sup>x5</sup>	12.5% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.05	Mean= 3.25	Mean= 3.10	Mean=3.20	Mean= 3.03	Mean= 3.03	Mean=3.29	Mean=3.13
q. 12. My father is / was my good friend.	7.89% <sup>x1</sup>	1.59% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	4% <sup>x1</sup>		11.47% <sup>x1</sup>	8.33% <sup>x1</sup>	8.70% <sup>x1</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x2</sup>	23.81% <sup>x2</sup>	23.81% <sup>x2</sup>	8% <sup>x2</sup>	11.43% <sup>x2</sup>	16.39% <sup>x2</sup>	20.83% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	18.42% <sup>x3</sup>	28.57% <sup>x3</sup>	19.05% <sup>x3</sup>	48% <sup>x3</sup>	37.14% <sup>x3</sup>	39.34% <sup>x3</sup>	33.33% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	42.11% <sup>x4</sup>	20.63% <sup>x4</sup>	42.86% <sup>x4</sup>	16% <sup>x4</sup>	8.6% <sup>x4</sup>	22.95% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
	21.10% <sup>x5</sup>	22.22% <sup>x5</sup>	9.52% <sup>x5</sup>	16% <sup>x5</sup>	34.29% <sup>x5</sup>	9.83% <sup>x5</sup>	12.5% <sup>x5</sup>	13.04% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean: 3.58	Mean: 3.10	Mean: 3.29	Mean: 3.24	Mean: 3.49	Mean: 3.03	Mean: 3.13	Mean: 3.22
q. 22. I have shared many of my father's interests.	13.16% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	19.05% <sup>x1</sup>	20% <sup>x1</sup>	20% <sup>x1</sup>	11.47% <sup>x1</sup>	16.76% <sup>x1</sup>	13.04% <sup>x1</sup>
	36.84% <sup>x2</sup>	23.81% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	20% <sup>x2</sup>	11.43% <sup>x2</sup>	13.11% <sup>x2</sup>	16.76% <sup>x2</sup>	8.70% <sup>x2</sup>
	28.94% <sup>x3</sup>	19.04% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	17.14% <sup>x3</sup>	22.95% <sup>x3</sup>	20.83% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	21.10% <sup>x4</sup>	27% <sup>x4</sup>	19.05% <sup>x4</sup>	40% <sup>x4</sup>	37.14% <sup>x4</sup>	29.51% <sup>x4</sup>	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
		6.35% <sup>x5</sup>	3% <sup>x5</sup>	8% <sup>x5</sup>	14.29% <sup>x5</sup>	22.95% <sup>x5</sup>	12.5% <sup>x5</sup>	21.74% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.58	Mean=2.73	Mean=2.76	Mean= 2.96	Mean= 3.14	Mean= 3.45	Mean= 3.08	Mean= 3.39

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Table Continued...

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 41. I like / liked having a good time with my father.	7.89% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	8% <sup>x1</sup>	5.71% <sup>x1</sup>	4.91% <sup>x1</sup>	4.16% <sup>x1</sup>	4.35% <sup>x1</sup>
	2.63% <sup>x2</sup>	3.17% <sup>x2</sup>	4.76% <sup>x2</sup>	4% <sup>x2</sup>	8.6% <sup>x2</sup>	1.63% <sup>x2</sup>	8.33% <sup>x2</sup>	4.35% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	17.46% <sup>x3</sup>	4.76% <sup>x3</sup>		5.71% <sup>x3</sup>	13.11% <sup>x3</sup>		13.04% <sup>x3</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x4</sup>	19.04% <sup>x4</sup>	42.86% <sup>x4</sup>	52% <sup>x4</sup>	37.14% <sup>x4</sup>	39.34% <sup>x4</sup>	50% <sup>x4</sup>	34.78% <sup>x4</sup>
	63.16% <sup>x5</sup>	55.55% <sup>x5</sup>	42.86% <sup>x5</sup>	36% <sup>x5</sup>	42.86% <sup>x5</sup>	40.98% <sup>x5</sup>	37.5% <sup>x5</sup>	43.48% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 4.21	Mean= 4.27	Mean= 4.14	Mean= 4.04	Mean= 4.03	Mean= 4.10	Mean= 4.08	Mean= 4.09
q. 42. I often do / did work together with my father.	18.42% <sup>x1</sup>	7.94% <sup>x1</sup>			2.86% <sup>x1</sup>	4.91% <sup>x1</sup>	8.33% <sup>x1</sup>	4.35% <sup>x1</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x2</sup>	12.7% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	12% <sup>x2</sup>	14.29% <sup>x2</sup>	9.83% <sup>x2</sup>	12.5% <sup>x2</sup>	8.70% <sup>x2</sup>
	34.21% <sup>x3</sup>	30.16% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	18% <sup>x3</sup>	31.43% <sup>x3</sup>	21.31% <sup>x3</sup>	20.83% <sup>x3</sup>	13.04% <sup>x3</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	42.86% <sup>x4</sup>	24% <sup>x4</sup>	17.14% <sup>x4</sup>	31.15% <sup>x4</sup>	41.67% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x5</sup>	25.40% <sup>x5</sup>	14.28% <sup>x5</sup>	32% <sup>x5</sup>	34.29% <sup>x5</sup>	32.79% <sup>x5</sup>	16.76% <sup>x5</sup>	47.83% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.18	Mean= 3.57	Mean= 3.38	Mean= 3.84	Mean= 3.66	Mean= 3.77	Mean= 4.21	Mean= 4.0
q. 43. I like / liked spending holidays with my father.	5.27% <sup>x1</sup>	7.9% <sup>x1</sup>		4% <sup>x1</sup>	5.71% <sup>x1</sup>	3.30% <sup>x1</sup>	8.33% <sup>x1</sup>	
	13.16% <sup>x2</sup>	9.5% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>	4% <sup>x2</sup>	5.71% <sup>x2</sup>	4.91% <sup>x2</sup>	8.33% <sup>x2</sup>	4.35% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x3</sup>	7.9% <sup>x3</sup>	4.76% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	13.11% <sup>x3</sup>	4.16% <sup>x3</sup>	5.35% <sup>x3</sup>
	18.42% <sup>x4</sup>	23.8% <sup>x4</sup>	52.40% <sup>x4</sup>	21% <sup>x4</sup>	22.86% <sup>x4</sup>	45.90% <sup>x4</sup>	16.76% <sup>x4</sup>	39.13% <sup>x4</sup>
	55.26% <sup>x5</sup>	50.8% <sup>x5</sup>	33.33% <sup>x5</sup>	56% <sup>x5</sup>	51.43% <sup>x5</sup>	32.79% <sup>x5</sup>	62.5% <sup>x5</sup>	52.17% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=4.05	Mean=4.00	Mean=4.10	Mean=4.28	Mean=4.09	Mean=4.00	Mean=4.17	Mean=4.39

**Table 13** Uninvolved father (q. 2, 3, 9, 10, 13, 19, 26, 37, 38, 40, 44, 47, 51)

questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 2. My father is / was too busy to spend enough time with me.	36.84% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	32% <sup>x1</sup>	25.71% <sup>x1</sup>	14.75% <sup>x1</sup>	20.83% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>
	21.10% <sup>x2</sup>	39.68% <sup>x2</sup>	28.56% <sup>x2</sup>	48% <sup>x2</sup>	42.86% <sup>x2</sup>	49.18% <sup>x2</sup>	54.17% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	19.04% <sup>x3</sup>		4% <sup>x3</sup>	8.57% <sup>x3</sup>	16.39% <sup>x3</sup>	16.76% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	18.4% <sup>x4</sup>	14.29% <sup>x4</sup>	38.1% <sup>x4</sup>	12% <sup>x4</sup>	14.28% <sup>x4</sup>	11.47% <sup>x4</sup>	4.16% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x5</sup>	3.17% <sup>x5</sup>	9.52% <sup>x5</sup>		8.57% <sup>x5</sup>	8.20% <sup>x5</sup>	4.16% <sup>x5</sup>	8.70% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=2.45	Mean=2.33	Mean=2.81	Mean=2.04	Mean=2.37	Mean= 2.49	Mean=2.17	Mean=2.48
q. 3. When at home, my father does / did some business, spends / spent time in front of the computer and TV or reads / read newspapers.	21.10% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	19.05% <sup>x1</sup>	20% <sup>x1</sup>	14.28% <sup>x1</sup>	9.84% <sup>x1</sup>	8.33% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>
	26.32% <sup>x2</sup>	12.70% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	20% <sup>x2</sup>	22.86% <sup>x2</sup>	42.62% <sup>x2</sup>	29.16% <sup>x2</sup>	30.43% <sup>x2</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>		20% <sup>x3</sup>	31.43% <sup>x3</sup>	14.75% <sup>x3</sup>	20.83% <sup>x3</sup>	21.74% <sup>x3</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x4</sup>	44.44% <sup>x4</sup>	28.56% <sup>x4</sup>	40% <sup>x4</sup>	28.57% <sup>x4</sup>	27.87% <sup>x4</sup>	41.67% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x5</sup>	9.52% <sup>x5</sup>	19.05% <sup>x5</sup>		2.86% <sup>x5</sup>	4.92% <sup>x5</sup>		4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.82	Mean=2.97	Mean=2.95	Mean=2.80	Mean=2.83	Mean= 2.76	Mean=2.96	Mean=2.95
q. 9. My father doesn't know my friends.	31.58% <sup>x1</sup>	12.70% <sup>x1</sup>	14.24% <sup>x1</sup>	4% <sup>x1</sup>	5.71% <sup>x1</sup>	8.20% <sup>x1</sup>		13.04% <sup>x1</sup>
	26.32% <sup>x2</sup>	44.44% <sup>x2</sup>	38.10% <sup>x2</sup>	52% <sup>x2</sup>	42.86% <sup>x2</sup>	49.18% <sup>x2</sup>	50% <sup>x2</sup>	26.08% <sup>x2</sup>
	28.94% <sup>x3</sup>	17.46% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	31.43% <sup>x3</sup>	19.67% <sup>x3</sup>	20.83% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x4</sup>	22.22% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	24% <sup>x4</sup>	14.28% <sup>x4</sup>	18.03% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x5</sup>	23.81% <sup>x5</sup>	9.52% <sup>x5</sup>	8% <sup>x5</sup>	5.71% <sup>x5</sup>	4.92% <sup>x5</sup>	4.16% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=2.32	Mean=2.73	Mean=2.76	Mean=2.80	Mean=2.71	Mean= 2.62	Mean=2.83	Mean= 2.04
q. 10. My father doesn't ask questions about my problems.	50% <sup>x1</sup>	47.62% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	36% <sup>x1</sup>	28.57% <sup>x1</sup>	26.23% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	26.08% <sup>x1</sup>
	47.27% <sup>x2</sup>	17.46% <sup>x2</sup>	28.56% <sup>x2</sup>	16% <sup>x2</sup>	22.86% <sup>x2</sup>	44.26% <sup>x2</sup>	25% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	16% <sup>x3</sup>	17.14% <sup>x3</sup>	8.20% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x4</sup>	17.46% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	28% <sup>x4</sup>	14.28% <sup>x4</sup>	19.67% <sup>x4</sup>	16.76% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x5</sup>	7.94% <sup>x5</sup>	9.52% <sup>x5</sup>	4% <sup>x5</sup>	17.14% <sup>x5</sup>	1.64% <sup>x5</sup>	16.76% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=2.08	Mean= 2.21	Mean= 2.67	Mean= 2.48	Mean= 2.69	Mean= 2.02	Mean= 2.58	Mean= 2.65



# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Table Continued...

questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 13. My father doesn't / didn't enough care for me.	50% <sup>x1</sup>	49.21% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	20% <sup>x1</sup>	20% <sup>x1</sup>	22.95% <sup>x1</sup>	16.76% <sup>x1</sup>	21.74% <sup>x1</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x2</sup>	23.81% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	56% <sup>x2</sup>	37.14% <sup>x2</sup>	39.34% <sup>x2</sup>	54.17% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	18% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	21.31% <sup>x3</sup>	12.5% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x4</sup>	6.35% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	8% <sup>x4</sup>	17.14% <sup>x4</sup>	8.20% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x5</sup>	6.35% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>	4% <sup>x5</sup>	11.43% <sup>x5</sup>	8.20% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.29	Mean= 1.99	Mean= 2.62	Mean= 2.2	Mean= 2.63	Mean= 2.39	Mean= 2.38	Mean= 2.70
q. 19. It wasn't / isn't my father who controlled whether I did/ have done my lessons, came / come home on time, behave appropriately, etc.	39.47% <sup>x1</sup>	24.92% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	44% <sup>x1</sup>	40% <sup>x1</sup>	27.87% <sup>x1</sup>	29.16% <sup>x1</sup>	13.04% <sup>x1</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x2</sup>	36.51% <sup>x2</sup>	19.05% <sup>x2</sup>	36% <sup>x2</sup>	25.71% <sup>x2</sup>	31.15% <sup>x2</sup>	29.16% <sup>x2</sup>	26.08% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	23.81% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	22.86% <sup>x3</sup>	24.59% <sup>x3</sup>	16.76% <sup>x3</sup>	21.74% <sup>x3</sup>
	26.32% <sup>x4</sup>	11.11% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	4% <sup>x4</sup>	8.57% <sup>x4</sup>	9.54% <sup>x4</sup>	12.5% <sup>x4</sup>	34.78% <sup>x4</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x5</sup>	7.94% <sup>x5</sup>	4% <sup>x5</sup>	4% <sup>x5</sup>	2.86% <sup>x5</sup>	6.56% <sup>x5</sup>	12.5% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=2.42	Mean=2.21	Mean=2.38	Mean=1.88	Mean=2.09	Mean= 2.36	Mean= 2.5	Mean=2.91
q. 26. My father is /was a good person, but I wish he would learn / have learned to be a better father.	26.32% <sup>x1</sup>	19.29% <sup>x1</sup>	28.56% <sup>x1</sup>	24% <sup>x1</sup>	31.43% <sup>x1</sup>	16.39% <sup>x1</sup>	4.16% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>
	18.42% <sup>x2</sup>	27% <sup>x2</sup>	23.81% <sup>x2</sup>	40% <sup>x2</sup>	31.43% <sup>x2</sup>	24.59% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	4.76% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	25.71% <sup>x3</sup>	21.31% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x4</sup>	19.04% <sup>x4</sup>	19.05% <sup>x4</sup>	20% <sup>x4</sup>	8.57% <sup>x4</sup>	19.67% <sup>x4</sup>	37.5% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	21.10% <sup>x5</sup>	20.63% <sup>x5</sup>	23.81% <sup>x5</sup>	4% <sup>x5</sup>	2.86% <sup>x5</sup>	18.03% <sup>x5</sup>	16.76% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=2.82	Mean=2.95	Mean=2.86	Mean=2.40	Mean= 2.2	Mean= 2.98	Mean=2.88	Mean=2.78
q. 37. My father has never (seldom) praised me.	47.37% <sup>x1</sup>	57.14% <sup>x1</sup>	28.56% <sup>x1</sup>	52% <sup>x1</sup>	51.43% <sup>x1</sup>	31.15% <sup>x1</sup>	29.16% <sup>x1</sup>	26.08% <sup>x1</sup>
	26.32% <sup>x2</sup>	20.63% <sup>x2</sup>	28.56% <sup>x2</sup>	32% <sup>x2</sup>	22.86% <sup>x2</sup>	27.87% <sup>x2</sup>	54.83% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	8.57% <sup>x3</sup>	14.75% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x4</sup>	6.35% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	4% <sup>x4</sup>	11.43% <sup>x4</sup>	19.67% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	2.63% <sup>x5</sup>	6.35% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>	4% <sup>x5</sup>	5.71% <sup>x5</sup>	6.56% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=1.92	Mean=1.84	Mean=2.48	Mean=1.76	Mean=1.97	Mean= 2.43	Mean=2.21	Mean= 2.65
q. 38. My father has never asked me about my interests, my favorite books, movies, etc.	26.32% <sup>x1</sup>	20.63% <sup>x1</sup>	14.28% <sup>x1</sup>	28% <sup>x1</sup>	25.71% <sup>x1</sup>	13.11% <sup>x1</sup>	12.5% <sup>x1</sup>	8.70% <sup>x1</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x2</sup>	25.40% <sup>x2</sup>	23.81% <sup>x2</sup>	12% <sup>x2</sup>	28.57% <sup>x2</sup>	24.59% <sup>x2</sup>	20.83% <sup>x2</sup>	30.43% <sup>x2</sup>
	18.42% <sup>x3</sup>	25.40% <sup>x3</sup>	23.81% <sup>x3</sup>	28% <sup>x3</sup>	20% <sup>x3</sup>	32.79% <sup>x3</sup>	37.5% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x4</sup>	20.63% <sup>x4</sup>	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	24% <sup>x4</sup>	14.28% <sup>x4</sup>	9.84% <sup>x4</sup>	20.83% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	18.42% <sup>x5</sup>	7.94% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>	8% <sup>x5</sup>	11.43% <sup>x5</sup>	19.67% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	8.70% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.97	Mean= 2.70	Mean= 2.90	Mean= 2.72	Mean= 2.57	Mean= 2.98	Mean= 2.92	Mean= 2.72
q. 39. My father has never cooked for me, even when mother was absent or ill.	42.11% <sup>x1</sup>	44.44% <sup>x1</sup>	19.05% <sup>x1</sup>	52% <sup>x1</sup>	48.57% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>	36.06% <sup>x1</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x2</sup>	27% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	32% <sup>x2</sup>	25.71% <sup>x2</sup>	45.83% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>	32.79% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	7.94% <sup>x3</sup>		4% <sup>x3</sup>	11.43% <sup>x3</sup>	4.16% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>	22.95% <sup>x3</sup>
	2.63% <sup>x4</sup>	7.94% <sup>x4</sup>	28.56% <sup>x4</sup>	12% <sup>x4</sup>	11.43% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>	
	18.42% <sup>x5</sup>	12.70% <sup>x5</sup>	19.05% <sup>x5</sup>		2.86% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	8.70% <sup>x5</sup>	8.20% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=2.32	Mean=2.17	Mean=2.95	Mean=1.76	Mean=1.94	Mean= 2.11	Mean=2.13	Mean=2.87
q. 40. My father has never sat at my bed when I was ill.	63.16% <sup>x1</sup>	47.62% <sup>x1</sup>	28.56% <sup>x1</sup>	56% <sup>x1</sup>	45.71% <sup>x1</sup>	37.70% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	30.43% <sup>x1</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x2</sup>	22.22% <sup>x2</sup>	47.62% <sup>x2</sup>	32% <sup>x2</sup>	22.86% <sup>x2</sup>	39.34% <sup>x2</sup>	50% <sup>x2</sup>	26.08% <sup>x2</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	4.76% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	11.43% <sup>x3</sup>	18.03% <sup>x3</sup>	4.16% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
		9.52% <sup>x4</sup>	19.05% <sup>x4</sup>		8.57% <sup>x4</sup>	1.64% <sup>x4</sup>	4.16% <sup>x4</sup>	13.04% <sup>x4</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x5</sup>	11.11% <sup>x5</sup>		4% <sup>x5</sup>	11.43% <sup>x5</sup>	3.28% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=1.68	Mean=2.14	Mean=2.14	Mean=1.84	Mean= 1.83	Mean=1.93	Mean=2.04	Mean=2.35

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Table Continued...

questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 44. My father has never taken me to school or gone to parents' meeting.	28.94% <sup>x1</sup>	44.44% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	48% <sup>x1</sup>	51.43% <sup>x1</sup>	27.87% <sup>x1</sup>	29.16% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x2</sup>	20.63% <sup>x2</sup>	42.86% <sup>x2</sup>	24% <sup>x2</sup>	20% <sup>x2</sup>	34.43% <sup>x2</sup>	37.5% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>
	21.10% <sup>x3</sup>	15.88% <sup>x3</sup>	4.79% <sup>x3</sup>	4% <sup>x3</sup>	8.57% <sup>x3</sup>	18.03% <sup>x3</sup>	20.83% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	2.63% <sup>x4</sup>	11.11% <sup>x4</sup>	14.28% <sup>x4</sup>	4% <sup>x4</sup>	2.86% <sup>x4</sup>	13.11% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x5</sup>	7.94% <sup>x5</sup>	14.28% <sup>x5</sup>	16% <sup>x5</sup>	17.14% <sup>x5</sup>	6.56% <sup>x5</sup>	4.16% <sup>x5</sup>	8.70% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=2.97	Mean= 2.17	Mean= 2.52	Mean= 2.13	Mean= 2.11	Mean= 2.36	Mean= 2.21	Mean= 2.87
q. 47. My father never (seldom) shares /shared information about his work.	26.32% <sup>x1</sup>	17.46% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	28% <sup>x1</sup>	17.14% <sup>x1</sup>	22.95% <sup>x1</sup>	12.5% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>
	31.58% <sup>x2</sup>	17.46% <sup>x2</sup>	19.05% <sup>x2</sup>	24% <sup>x2</sup>	40% <sup>x2</sup>	22.95% <sup>x2</sup>	12.5% <sup>x2</sup>	26.08% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	17.46% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	8.57% <sup>x3</sup>	22.95% <sup>x3</sup>	16.76% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x4</sup>	34.92% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	20% <sup>x4</sup>	17.14% <sup>x4</sup>	19.67% <sup>x4</sup>	54.17% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x5</sup>	12.70% <sup>x5</sup>	19.05% <sup>x5</sup>	20% <sup>x5</sup>	17.14% <sup>x5</sup>	11.47% <sup>x5</sup>	4.16% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.80	Mean= 2.90	Mean= 2.95	Mean= 2.80	Mean= 2.77	Mean= 2.74	Mean= 2.83	Mean= 2.74
q. 51. My father is / was a good man, but not a good father.	55.26% <sup>x1</sup>	44.44% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	52% <sup>x1</sup>	54.28% <sup>x1</sup>	31.15% <sup>x1</sup>	29.16% <sup>x1</sup>	21.74% <sup>x1</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x2</sup>	24.40% <sup>x2</sup>	28.56% <sup>x2</sup>	32% <sup>x2</sup>	17.14% <sup>x2</sup>	36.06% <sup>x2</sup>	50% <sup>x2</sup>	21.7% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	5.71% <sup>x3</sup>	22.95% <sup>x3</sup>	12.5% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x4</sup>	9.52% <sup>x4</sup>	14.28% <sup>x4</sup>	4% <sup>x4</sup>	5.71% <sup>x4</sup>	4.92% <sup>x4</sup>		26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x5</sup>	6.35% <sup>x5</sup>	14.28% <sup>x5</sup>	4% <sup>x5</sup>	17.14% <sup>x5</sup>	4.92% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=2.13	Mean=2.08	Mean=2.08	Mean=1.76	Mean=2.14	Mean=2.33	Mean=2.08	Mean=2.70

**Table 14** Father who hurts (q. 15, 16, 20, 36)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 15. My father often hurts (hurt) my feelings because he doesn't (didn't) understand them.	47.37% <sup>x15</sup>	44.44% <sup>x15</sup>	19.05% <sup>x1</sup>	28% <sup>x1</sup>	28.57% <sup>x1</sup>	29.50% <sup>x1</sup>	25% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>
	31.58% <sup>x2</sup>	31.75% <sup>x2</sup>	42.86% <sup>x2</sup>	56% <sup>x2</sup>	48.57% <sup>x2</sup>	44.26% <sup>x2</sup>	50% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x3</sup>	11.11% <sup>x3</sup>	23.81% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	8.57% <sup>x3</sup>	13.11% <sup>x3</sup>	12.5% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	.27% <sup>x4</sup>	7.94% <sup>x4</sup>	9.52% <sup>x4</sup>	4% <sup>x4</sup>	8.57% <sup>x4</sup>	8.20% <sup>x4</sup>	4.16% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>		5.71% <sup>x5</sup>	4.92% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.00	Mean= 1.97	Mean= 2.38	Mean= 1.92	Mean= 1.89	Mean= 2.15	Mean= 2.21	Mean= 2.78
q. 16. My father purposefully hurts (hurt) my feelings.	55.26% <sup>x1</sup>	63.49% <sup>x1</sup>	57.14% <sup>x1</sup>	40% <sup>x1</sup>	46.86% <sup>x1</sup>	59.02% <sup>x1</sup>	45.83% <sup>x1</sup>	21.74% <sup>x1</sup>
	26.32% <sup>x2</sup>	19.04% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	28% <sup>x2</sup>	37.14% <sup>x2</sup>	27.87% <sup>x2</sup>	75.83% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x3</sup>	7.94% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	28% <sup>x3</sup>	2.86% <sup>x3</sup>	8.20% <sup>x3</sup>	4.16% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x4</sup>	7.94% <sup>x4</sup>			11.43% <sup>x4</sup>	4.92% <sup>x4</sup>		21.74% <sup>x4</sup>
		1.59% <sup>x5</sup>		4% <sup>x5</sup>	5.71% <sup>x5</sup>		4.16% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 1.74	Mean= 1.33	Mean= 1.92	Mean=2.00	Mean= 1.71	Mean= 1.59	Mean= 1.71	Mean= 2.65
q. 20. My father is / was often strict with me and punishes / punished me.	55.26% <sup>x1</sup>	46.03% <sup>x1</sup>	28.56% <sup>x1</sup>	36% <sup>x1</sup>	34.28% <sup>x1</sup>	34.43% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	21.74% <sup>x1</sup>
	26.32% <sup>x2</sup>	22.22% <sup>x2</sup>	38.10% <sup>x2</sup>	36% <sup>x2</sup>	22.86% <sup>x2</sup>	47.54% <sup>x2</sup>	29.16% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	15.88% <sup>x3</sup>	4.76% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	11.43% <sup>x3</sup>	9.84% <sup>x3</sup>	20.83% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
		9.52% <sup>x4</sup>	28.56% <sup>x4</sup>	4% <sup>x4</sup>	11.43% <sup>x4</sup>	8.20% <sup>x4</sup>	12.5% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x5</sup>	6.35% <sup>x5</sup>		12% <sup>x5</sup>	20% <sup>x5</sup>		4.16% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=1.74	Mean=2.52	Mean=2.33	Mean= 2.20	Mean=2.60	Mean= 1.92	Mean=2.25	Mean=2.70
q. 36. My father has never applied rough physical power against me.	5.27% <sup>x1</sup>	11.11% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	4% <sup>x1</sup>	5.71% <sup>x1</sup>	6.56% <sup>x1</sup>	4.16% <sup>x1</sup>	8.70% <sup>x1</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x2</sup>	12.70% <sup>x2</sup>	9.52% <sup>x2</sup>	4% <sup>x2</sup>	11.43% <sup>x2</sup>	18.03% <sup>x2</sup>	12.5% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	11.11% <sup>x3</sup>	9.52% <sup>x3</sup>	4% <sup>x3</sup>	5.71% <sup>x3</sup>	27.87% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	13.04% <sup>x3</sup>
	28.94% <sup>x4</sup>	28.57% <sup>x4</sup>	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	56% <sup>x4</sup>	51.43% <sup>x4</sup>	27.87% <sup>x4</sup>	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	34.78% <sup>x4</sup>
	47.37% <sup>x5</sup>	36.51% <sup>x5</sup>	42.86% <sup>x5</sup>	32% <sup>x5</sup>	25.71% <sup>x5</sup>	19.67% <sup>x5</sup>	37.5% <sup>x5</sup>	26.08% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 4.08	Mean= 3.67	Mean= 4.0	Mean= 4.08	Mean= 3.80	Mean= 3.52	Mean= 3.88	Mean= 3.52

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

**Table 15** Child (Not) caring for the father, not feeling close with father (q. 30, 31, 49, 54)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 30. I always care about my father's opinions on various issues.	5.27% <sup>x1</sup>	6.35% <sup>x1</sup>		4% <sup>x1</sup>	2.86% <sup>x1</sup>	4.92% <sup>x1</sup>	8.33% <sup>x1</sup>	4.35% <sup>x1</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x2</sup>	7.94% <sup>x2</sup>	4.76% <sup>x2</sup>	4% <sup>x2</sup>	5.71% <sup>x2</sup>	1.64% <sup>x2</sup>		8.70% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>		14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	16.39% <sup>x3</sup>	12.5% <sup>x3</sup>	21.74% <sup>x3</sup>
	47.37% <sup>x4</sup>	30.16% <sup>x4</sup>	66.67% <sup>x4</sup>	52% <sup>x4</sup>	31.43% <sup>x4</sup>	37.70% <sup>x4</sup>	54.17% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
	36.84% <sup>x5</sup>	41.27% <sup>x5</sup>	14.28% <sup>x5</sup>	40% <sup>x5</sup>	45.71% <sup>x5</sup>	34.43% <sup>x5</sup>	25% <sup>x5</sup>	34.78% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.84	Mean= 3.92	Mean= 3.86	Mean= 4.20	Mean= 4.11	Mean= 3.80	Mean= 3.88	Mean= 3.83
q. 31. I seldom or never follow my father's advice.	50% <sup>x1</sup>	34.92% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	28% <sup>x1</sup>	28.57% <sup>x1</sup>	24.59% <sup>x1</sup>	29.16% <sup>x1</sup>	26.08% <sup>x1</sup>
	38.94% <sup>x2</sup>	27% <sup>x2</sup>	23.81% <sup>x2</sup>	52% <sup>x2</sup>	40% <sup>x2</sup>	39.34% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	13.16% <sup>x3</sup>	25.40% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	16% <sup>x3</sup>	11.43% <sup>x3</sup>	24.59% <sup>x3</sup>	25% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x4</sup>	9.52% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	4% <sup>x4</sup>	8.57% <sup>x4</sup>	9.84% <sup>x4</sup>	12.5% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	2.63% <sup>x5</sup>	3.17% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>		11.43% <sup>x5</sup>	1.64% <sup>x5</sup>		4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 1.82	Mean= 1.81	Mean= 2.19	Mean= 1.96	Mean= 2.34	Mean= 2.25	Mean= 2.21	Mean= 2.65
q. 33. I cannot speak to my father on some personal topics.	23.68% <sup>x1</sup>	17.46% <sup>x1</sup>	4.76% <sup>x1</sup>	20% <sup>x1</sup>	20% <sup>x1</sup>	11.47% <sup>x1</sup>	20.83% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x2</sup>	19.04% <sup>x2</sup>	28.56% <sup>x2</sup>	24% <sup>x2</sup>	25.71% <sup>x2</sup>	26.23% <sup>x2</sup>	16.76% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	36.84% <sup>x3</sup>	25.40% <sup>x3</sup>	38.10% <sup>x3</sup>	12% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	24.59% <sup>x3</sup>	25% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	21.10% <sup>x4</sup>	31.75% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	36% <sup>x4</sup>	25.71% <sup>x4</sup>	27.87% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x5</sup>	6.35% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>	8% <sup>x5</sup>	14.28% <sup>x5</sup>	9.84% <sup>x5</sup>	12.5% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.79	Mean= 2.90	Mean= 2.95	Mean= 2.88	Mean= 2.89	Mean= 2.98	Mean= 2.92	Mean= 2.87
q. 49. I don't really care about my father's life and problems.	39.47% <sup>x1</sup>	49.21% <sup>x1</sup>	38.10% <sup>x1</sup>	56% <sup>x1</sup>	45.71% <sup>x1</sup>	36.06% <sup>x1</sup>	29.16% <sup>x1</sup>	21.74% <sup>x1</sup>
	31.58% <sup>x2</sup>	28.57% <sup>x2</sup>	38.10% <sup>x2</sup>	28% <sup>x2</sup>	25.71% <sup>x2</sup>	32.79% <sup>x2</sup>	45.83% <sup>x2</sup>	21.74% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x3</sup>	12.70% <sup>x3</sup>	4.76% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	17.14% <sup>x3</sup>	16.39% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x4</sup>	4.76% <sup>x4</sup>	14.28% <sup>x4</sup>	7% <sup>x4</sup>	5.71% <sup>x4</sup>	11.47% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	10.53% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>	4.76% <sup>x5</sup>		5.71% <sup>x5</sup>	3.28% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.21	Mean= 1.68	Mean= 2.10	Mean= 1.68	Mean= 2.00	Mean= 2.13	Mean= 2.21	Mean= 2.70
q. 54. I love my father, but we didn't / don't have close relationships	44.74% <sup>x1</sup>	38.10% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	32% <sup>x1</sup>	40% <sup>x1</sup>	14.75% <sup>x1</sup>	16.76% <sup>x1</sup>	17.40% <sup>x1</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x2</sup>	19.04% <sup>x2</sup>	33.33% <sup>x2</sup>	32% <sup>x2</sup>	17.14% <sup>x2</sup>	34.43% <sup>x2</sup>	50% <sup>x2</sup>	26.08% <sup>x2</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x3</sup>	14.29% <sup>x3</sup>	4.76% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	14.28% <sup>x3</sup>	21.31% <sup>x3</sup>	12.50% <sup>x3</sup>	26.08% <sup>x3</sup>
	7.89% <sup>x4</sup>	14.29% <sup>x4</sup>	23.81% <sup>x4</sup>	12% <sup>x4</sup>	11.43% <sup>x4</sup>	14.75% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	15.79% <sup>x5</sup>	14.29% <sup>x5</sup>	14.28% <sup>x5</sup>	16% <sup>x5</sup>	17.14% <sup>x5</sup>	14.75% <sup>x5</sup>	12.5% <sup>x5</sup>	4.35% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.34	Mean= 2.05	Mean= 2.71	Mean= 2.48	Mean= 2.49	Mean= 2.80	Mean= 2.50	Mean= 2.74

**Table 16.** Can involved fatherhood be taught? (q. 27, 28)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 27. I don't think caring fatherhood can be taught.	5.27% <sup>x1</sup>	9.52% <sup>x1</sup>	23.81% <sup>x1</sup>	12% <sup>x1</sup>	11.43% <sup>x1</sup>	6.56% <sup>x1</sup>	4.16% <sup>x1</sup>	8.70% <sup>x1</sup>
	5.27% <sup>x2</sup>	7.94% <sup>x2</sup>	4.76% <sup>x2</sup>	12% <sup>x2</sup>	14.28% <sup>x2</sup>	27.87% <sup>x2</sup>	20.83% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	39.47% <sup>x3</sup>	7.94% <sup>x3</sup>	19.05% <sup>x3</sup>		28.57% <sup>x3</sup>	22.95% <sup>x3</sup>	4.16% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	23.68% <sup>x4</sup>	44.44% <sup>x4</sup>	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	60% <sup>x4</sup>	31.43% <sup>x4</sup>	31.15% <sup>x4</sup>	54.17% <sup>x4</sup>	30.43% <sup>x4</sup>
	26.32% <sup>x5</sup>	30.16% <sup>x5</sup>	19.05% <sup>x5</sup>	16% <sup>x5</sup>	14.28% <sup>x5</sup>	11.47% <sup>x5</sup>	16.76% <sup>x5</sup>	13.04% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.66	Mean= 3.78	Mean= 3.19	Mean= 3.56	Mean= 3.23	Mean= 3.13	Mean= 3.58	Mean= 3.22
q. 28. I believe it would do my father good if he attended some courses about parents-to-children relationships.	7.89% <sup>x1</sup>	7.94% <sup>x1</sup>	14.28% <sup>x1</sup>	8% <sup>x1</sup>	11.43% <sup>x1</sup>	4.92% <sup>x1</sup>	4.16% <sup>x1</sup>	13.04% <sup>x1</sup>
	18.42% <sup>x2</sup>	12.70% <sup>x2</sup>	4.76% <sup>x2</sup>	16% <sup>x2</sup>	11.43% <sup>x2</sup>	18.03% <sup>x2</sup>	20.83% <sup>x2</sup>	17.40% <sup>x2</sup>
	42.11% <sup>x3</sup>	23.81% <sup>x3</sup>	23.81% <sup>x3</sup>	8% <sup>x3</sup>	5.71% <sup>x3</sup>	26.23% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	30.43% <sup>x3</sup>
	18.42% <sup>x4</sup>	34.92% <sup>x4</sup>	38.10% <sup>x4</sup>	40% <sup>x4</sup>	45.71% <sup>x4</sup>	40.98% <sup>x4</sup>	66.67% <sup>x4</sup>	26.08% <sup>x4</sup>
	19.05% <sup>x5</sup>	20.63% <sup>x5</sup>	13.16% <sup>x5</sup>	28% <sup>x5</sup>	25.71% <sup>x5</sup>	9.84% <sup>x5</sup>		13.04% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.43	Mean= 3.48	Mean= 3.11	Mean= 3.44	Mean= 3.63	Mean= 3.33	Mean= 3.38	Mean= 3.09



# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

**Table 17** The Importance of father's role (q.1, 52, 32)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
1. My father's role in my life is/was less than my mother's	29.6% $\times$ 1	26.66% $\times$ 1	20.83% $\times$ 1		36.11% $\times$ 1	40.91% $\times$ 1	10% $\times$ 1	10% $\times$ 1
	18.52% $\times$ 2	16.66% $\times$ 2	12.5% $\times$ 2	4.55% $\times$ 2	25.00% $\times$ 2	13.64% $\times$ 2	5% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2
	25.93% $\times$ 3	13.33% $\times$ 3	20.83% $\times$ 3	18.18% $\times$ 3	16.67% $\times$ 3	4.55% $\times$ 3	20% $\times$ 3	
	18.52% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4	16.67% $\times$ 4		13.89% $\times$ 4	22.72% $\times$ 4	15% $\times$ 4	30% $\times$ 4
	7.41% $\times$ 5	23.33% $\times$ 5	29.17% $\times$ 5	77.27% $\times$ 5	8.33% $\times$ 5	18.18% $\times$ 5	50% $\times$ 5	50% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 2.56	Mean= 2.97	Mean= 3.21	Mean= 4.32	Mean= 2.33	Mean= 2.64	Mean= 3.9	Mean= 4.00
q. 52. My father is/was one of the most important people in my life	3.70% $\times$ 1				13.89% $\times$ 1	13.64% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1	
		3.33% $\times$ 2			25.00% $\times$ 2	4.55% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2
	11.11% $\times$ 3		4.17% $\times$ 3		8.33% $\times$ 3	13.64% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3
	3.70% $\times$ 4	16.66% $\times$ 4	8.33% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	25.00% $\times$ 4	4.55% $\times$ 4		15% $\times$ 4
	81.48% $\times$ 5	80% $\times$ 5	87.5% $\times$ 5	90.90% $\times$ 5	27.78% $\times$ 5	63.63% $\times$ 5	70% $\times$ 5	65% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 4.37	Mean= 4.73	Mean= 4.83	Mean= 4.91	Mean= 3.38	Mean= 4.00	Mean= 4.20	Mean= 4.35
q. 32. If my father's and mother's opinions differ, I always (often) agree with my father.	51.85% $\times$ 1	20% $\times$ 1	41.67% $\times$ 1	18.18% $\times$ 1	25.00% $\times$ 1	31.82% $\times$ 1	25% $\times$ 1	15% $\times$ 1
	22.22% $\times$ 2	20% $\times$ 2	16.67% $\times$ 2	27.27% $\times$ 2	19.44% $\times$ 2	4.55% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	40% $\times$ 2
	14.81% $\times$ 3	26.66% $\times$ 3	37.5% $\times$ 3	18.18% $\times$ 3	27.78% $\times$ 3	36.36% $\times$ 3	25% $\times$ 3	20% $\times$ 3
	7.41% $\times$ 4	16.66% $\times$ 4			19.44% $\times$ 4	18.18% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4
	3.70% $\times$ 5	16.66% $\times$ 5	4.17% $\times$ 5	36.36% $\times$ 5	8.33% $\times$ 5	9.10% $\times$ 5	15% $\times$ 5	15% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 1.89	Mean= 2.90	Mean= 2.08	Mean= 3.09	Mean= 2.67	Mean= 2.68	Mean= 2.95	Mean= 2.70

**Table 18** Father's role is typical for the culture (q. 14, 53)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 14. My relationships with my father are typical enough in my country.	3.70% $\times$ 1	13.33% $\times$ 1	12.5% $\times$ 1		11.11% $\times$ 1	9.10% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1	10% $\times$ 1
	22.22% $\times$ 2	16.66% $\times$ 2	16.67% $\times$ 2		16.67% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2
	29.63% $\times$ 3	33.33% $\times$ 3	25% $\times$ 3	63.63% $\times$ 3	25.00% $\times$ 3	27.27% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3
	37.04% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4	20.83% $\times$ 4	27.27% $\times$ 4	22.22% $\times$ 4	22.72% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4
	7.41% $\times$ 5	16.66% $\times$ 5	20.83% $\times$ 5	9.10% $\times$ 5	25.00% $\times$ 5	31.82% $\times$ 5	45% $\times$ 5	45% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.22	Mean= 3.10	Mean= 3.08	Mean= 3.45	Mean= 3.33	Mean= 3.59	Mean= 3.59	Mean= 3.85
q. 53. My father is a typical representative of his culture.	11.11% $\times$ 1	6.66% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	11.11% $\times$ 1	18.18% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1		
	14.81% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2		13.89% $\times$ 2	4.55% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2		20% $\times$ 2
	29.63% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3	20.83% $\times$ 3	25.00% $\times$ 3		10% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	20% $\times$ 3
	25.92% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4	3.33% $\times$ 4	25.00% $\times$ 4	22.72% $\times$ 4	30% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4
	18.52% $\times$ 5	53.33% $\times$ 5	37.5% $\times$ 5	25.00% $\times$ 5	54.54% $\times$ 5	45% $\times$ 5	81.81% $\times$ 5	50% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.26	Mean= 4.03	Mean= 3.92	Mean= 3.39	Mean= 3.91	Mean= 3.55	Mean= 4.14	Mean= 4.10

**Table 19** Decision making in the family (q. 29, 50)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 29. In my family it is the father who makes decisions and solves problems, not the mother.	48.15% $\times$ 1	10% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	9.08% $\times$ 1	22% $\times$ 1	9.10% $\times$ 1		
	22.22% $\times$ 2	20% $\times$ 2	20.83% $\times$ 2		22% $\times$ 2	13.64% $\times$ 2	15% $\times$ 2	5% $\times$ 2
	18.52% $\times$ 3	36.66% $\times$ 3	29.17% $\times$ 3	63.63% $\times$ 3	14% $\times$ 3	31.82% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3
	3.70% $\times$ 4	13.33% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4	18.18% $\times$ 4	19% $\times$ 4	36.36% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4	35% $\times$ 4
	7.41% $\times$ 5	20% $\times$ 5	20.83% $\times$ 5	9.90% $\times$ 5	22% $\times$ 5	45.45% $\times$ 5	50% $\times$ 5	50% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 2.0	Mean= 3.13	Mean= 3.21	Mean= 3.18	Mean= 2.97	Mean= 3.7	Mean= 4.05	Mean= 4.3
q. 50. We often make decisions together with my father.	22.22% $\times$ 1	7% $\times$ 1		18.18% $\times$ 1	13.89% $\times$ 1	4.55% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1
	7.41% $\times$ 2	7% $\times$ 2	12.5% $\times$ 2		11.11% $\times$ 2	4.55% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	5% $\times$ 2
	14.81% $\times$ 3	7% $\times$ 3	12.5% $\times$ 3		5.56% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	5% $\times$ 3	5% $\times$ 3
	14.81% $\times$ 4	37% $\times$ 4	29.17% $\times$ 4	18.18% $\times$ 4	22.22% $\times$ 4	40.91% $\times$ 4	35% $\times$ 4	45% $\times$ 4
	40.74% $\times$ 5	43% $\times$ 5	45.83% $\times$ 5	63.64% $\times$ 5	47.22% $\times$ 5	40.91% $\times$ 5	45% $\times$ 5	40% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.44	Mean= 4.03	Mean= 4.08	Mean= 4.09	Mean= 3.78	Mean= 3.91	Mean= 4.05	Mean= 4.1
	1 $\times$ 1							
	2 $\times$ 2							
	1 $\times$ 3							
	7 $\times$ 4							
	9 $\times$ 5							
	Mean= 4.05							

**Table 20** Father as a human / Professional model (q.17, 21)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
17. I am proud of my father as a person and as a professional.	11.11% <sup>x1</sup>	3.33% <sup>x1</sup>		4.55% <sup>x1</sup>	2.78% <sup>x1</sup>	4.55% <sup>x1</sup>		
		10% <sup>x2</sup>		4.55% <sup>x2</sup>	2.78% <sup>x2</sup>	9.10% <sup>x2</sup>		
	11.11% <sup>x3</sup>	3.33% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>		2.78% <sup>x3</sup>	4.55% <sup>x3</sup>	10% <sup>x3</sup>	10% <sup>x3</sup>
	7.41% <sup>x4</sup>	13.33% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	18.18% <sup>x4</sup>	19.44% <sup>x4</sup>	18.18% <sup>x4</sup>	35% <sup>x4</sup>	30% <sup>x4</sup>
	70.37% <sup>x5</sup>	70% <sup>x5</sup>	83.33% <sup>x5</sup>	72.72% <sup>x5</sup>	72.22% <sup>x5</sup>	63.63% <sup>x5</sup>	55% <sup>x5</sup>	60% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 4.11	Mean= 4.37	Mean= 4.75	Mean= 4.71	Mean= 4.56	Mean= 4.27	Mean= 4.45	Mean= 4.5
21. I will choose / have chosen my father's profession / occupation (or a related one).	59.26% <sup>x1</sup>	63.33% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	72.72% <sup>x1</sup>	19.44% <sup>x1</sup>	50% <sup>x1</sup>	30% <sup>x1</sup>	40% <sup>x1</sup>
	7.41% <sup>x2</sup>	20% <sup>x2</sup>	4.17% <sup>x2</sup>	18.18% <sup>x2</sup>	19.44% <sup>x2</sup>	4.55% <sup>x2</sup>	5% <sup>x2</sup>	10% <sup>x2</sup>
	14.81% <sup>x3</sup>	3.33% <sup>x3</sup>	16.67% <sup>x3</sup>		30.56% <sup>x3</sup>	13.64% <sup>x3</sup>		
	7.41% <sup>x4</sup>	6.66% <sup>x4</sup>	20.83% <sup>x4</sup>		13.89% <sup>x4</sup>	4.55% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	10% <sup>x4</sup>
	11.11% <sup>x5</sup>	6.66% <sup>x5</sup>	20.83% <sup>x5</sup>	9.10% <sup>x5</sup>	16.67% <sup>x5</sup>	27.27% <sup>x5</sup>	40% <sup>x5</sup>	40% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.03	Mean= 1.73	Mean= 2.79	Mean= 1.55	Mean= 2.89	Mean= 3.05	Mean=3.40	Mean=3.00

**Table 21** Father as a gender model / his impact on gender role formation (q. 18, 25, 34, 35)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 18. My father has always been an exemplary MAN for me (I have always wanted to be like him – for male respondents; I have always wanted to meet a man like him – for female respondents).	8.52% <sup>x1</sup>	16.66% <sup>x1</sup>	4.17% <sup>x1</sup>	9.10% <sup>x1</sup>	5.56% <sup>x1</sup>	27.27% <sup>x1</sup>		
	11.11% <sup>x2</sup>	20% <sup>x2</sup>	4.17% <sup>x2</sup>		5.56% <sup>x2</sup>	9.10% <sup>x2</sup>	20% <sup>x2</sup>	25% <sup>x2</sup>
	11.11% <sup>x3</sup>	6.66% <sup>x3</sup>	4.17% <sup>x3</sup>	9.10% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	4.55% <sup>x3</sup>		
	29.63% <sup>x4</sup>	13.33% <sup>x4</sup>	29.17% <sup>x4</sup>	18.18% <sup>x4</sup>	25.00% <sup>x4</sup>	27.27% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	30% <sup>x4</sup>
	29.63% <sup>x5</sup>	43.33% <sup>x5</sup>	58.33% <sup>x5</sup>	63.63% <sup>x5</sup>	55.56% <sup>x5</sup>	31.82% <sup>x5</sup>	55% <sup>x5</sup>	45% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=3.38	Mean= 3.47	Mean=3.91	Mean= 4.27	Mean=4.36	Mean=3.27	Mean=4.15	Mean= 3.95
25. My father has contributed to the kind of man / woman I will / have become.	11.11% <sup>x1</sup>	10% <sup>x1</sup>	8.33% <sup>x1</sup>	9.10% <sup>x1</sup>	8.33% <sup>x1</sup>	9.10% <sup>x1</sup>	10% <sup>x1</sup>	
	22.22% <sup>x2</sup>	13.33% <sup>x2</sup>		9.10% <sup>x2</sup>	11.11% <sup>x2</sup>	9.10% <sup>x2</sup>	15% <sup>x2</sup>	15% <sup>x2</sup>
	14.81% <sup>x3</sup>	10% <sup>x3</sup>	16.67% <sup>x3</sup>		8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	9.10% <sup>x3</sup>	20% <sup>x3</sup>	20% <sup>x3</sup>
	18.52% <sup>x4</sup>	20% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	18.18% <sup>x4</sup>	25.00% <sup>x4</sup>	36.36% <sup>x4</sup>		
	33.33% <sup>x5</sup>	46.66% <sup>x5</sup>	50% <sup>x5</sup>	63.63% <sup>x5</sup>	47.22% <sup>x5</sup>	36.36% <sup>x5</sup>	55% <sup>x5</sup>	65% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean=3.41	Mean= 3.80	Mean=4.08	Mean= 4.18	Mean=3.92	Mean=3.82	Mean=4.75	Mea= 4.85
34. (for female respondents from the age of 20). I cannot get married, as no man is good enough for my father.		76.66% <sup>x1</sup>	41.67% <sup>x1</sup>	72.72% <sup>x1</sup>				
		6.66% <sup>x2</sup>	37.50% <sup>x2</sup>	9.10% <sup>x2</sup>				
		3.33% <sup>x3</sup>	12.50% <sup>x3</sup>	9.10% <sup>x3</sup>				
		3.33% <sup>x4</sup>	4.17% <sup>x4</sup>					
		10% <sup>x5</sup>	4.17% <sup>x5</sup>	9.10% <sup>x5</sup>				
		Mean= 1.63	Mean=1.92	Mean= 1.63				
q.35. (for female respondents from the age of 20) I cannot get married, as no man is as good as my father.		76.66% <sup>x1</sup>	62.5% <sup>x1</sup>	72.72% <sup>x1</sup>				
		6.66% <sup>x2</sup>	12.50% <sup>x2</sup>	9.10% <sup>x2</sup>				
		3.33% <sup>x3</sup>	12.50% <sup>x3</sup>	9.10% <sup>x3</sup>				
		3.33% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>					
		10% <sup>x5</sup>	4.17% <sup>x5</sup>	9.10% <sup>x5</sup>				
		Mean=1.63	Mean=1.75	Mean= 1.64				

**Table 22** Father as a Supporter / Protector / Motivator (q. 23, 24, 55)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 23. I am not / wasn't afraid of any problems / difficulties, as I am / was always sure that my father will/would help me.	7.41% $\times$ 1	6.66% $\times$ 1		9.10% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	4.55% $\times$ 1		
	7.41% $\times$ 2	6.66% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	5.56% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	15% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2
	3.70% $\times$ 3	6.66% $\times$ 3	8.33% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	16.67% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3		
	40.74% $\times$ 4	43.33% $\times$ 4	41.67% $\times$ 4		27.78% $\times$ 4	40.91% $\times$ 4	15% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4
	40.74% $\times$ 5	40% $\times$ 5	41.67% $\times$ 5	72.72% $\times$ 5	41.67% $\times$ 5	36.36% $\times$ 5	70% $\times$ 5	70% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 4.0	Mean= 4.13	Mean= 4.17	Mean= 4.18	Mean= 3.89	Mean= 3.95	Mean= 4.40	Mean= 4.50
q. 24. My father has / had always supported my efforts, ideas, etc.	11.11% $\times$ 1	3.33% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	4.55% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	4.55% $\times$ 1		
	3.70% $\times$ 2	6.66% $\times$ 2		4.55% $\times$ 2	5.56% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	5% $\times$ 2
	11.11% $\times$ 3	16.66% $\times$ 3	8.33% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	2.78% $\times$ 3	4.55% $\times$ 3		
	25.92% $\times$ 4	16.66% $\times$ 4	29.17% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	33.33% $\times$ 4	31.82% $\times$ 4	45% $\times$ 4	35% $\times$ 4
	48.15% $\times$ 5	53.33% $\times$ 5	54.17% $\times$ 5	72.72% $\times$ 5	50.00% $\times$ 5	50% $\times$ 5	45% $\times$ 5	60% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.96	Mean= 4.0	Mean= 4.21	Mean= 4.41	Mean= 4.11	Mean= 4.14	Mean= 4.25	Mean= 4.50
q. 55. I've done many things in my life as my father motivated me to.	7.41% $\times$ 1	10% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	4.55% $\times$ 1	13.89% $\times$ 1	9.10% $\times$ 1		
	11.11% $\times$ 2	13.33% $\times$ 2		4.55% $\times$ 2	13.89% $\times$ 2	13.64% $\times$ 2	5% $\times$ 2	5% $\times$ 2
	18.52% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3	8.33% $\times$ 3		13.89% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3	5% $\times$ 3
	33.33% $\times$ 4	30% $\times$ 4	41.67% $\times$ 4	27.27% $\times$ 4	16.67% $\times$ 4	27.27% $\times$ 4	40% $\times$ 4	40% $\times$ 4
	29.63% $\times$ 5	36.66% $\times$ 5	41.67% $\times$ 5	63.63% $\times$ 5	41.67% $\times$ 5	40.91% $\times$ 5	45% $\times$ 5	50% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.67	Mean= 3.70	Mean= 4.08	Mean= 4.41	Mean= 3.58	Mean= 3.77	Mean= 4.25	Mean= 4.35

**Table 23** Father as Authority / Advisor (q. 5, 11)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 5. My father is / was a clever man, I always ask / asked questions to him to understand things better.	11.11% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1		4.55% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	9.10% $\times$ 1	10% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1
		6.66% $\times$ 2		4.55% $\times$ 2	11.11% $\times$ 2	4.55% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	5% $\times$ 2
	11.11% $\times$ 3	6.66% $\times$ 3	4.17% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	11.11% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	5% $\times$ 3	5% $\times$ 3
	33.33% $\times$ 4	30% $\times$ 4	29.17% $\times$ 4	27.27% $\times$ 4	25.00% $\times$ 4	36.36% $\times$ 4	15% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4
	44.44% $\times$ 5	56.66% $\times$ 5	66.67% $\times$ 5	54.54% $\times$ 5	44.44% $\times$ 5	40.91% $\times$ 5	60% $\times$ 5	65% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 4.0	Mean= 4.37	Mean= 4.63	Mean= 4.23	Mean= 3.86	Mean= 3.95	Mean= 4.05	Mean= 4.35
q. 11. If I need help / advice, I often ask my father.	11.11% $\times$ 1	3.33% $\times$ 1	8.33% $\times$ 1	9.10% $\times$ 1	13.89% $\times$ 1	4.55% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1	5% $\times$ 1
	11.11% $\times$ 2	13.33% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	11.11% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	15% $\times$ 2	5% $\times$ 2
	11.11% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3	4.17% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	5.56% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3		
	22.22% $\times$ 4	33.33% $\times$ 4	29.17% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	25.00% $\times$ 4	36.36% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4	30% $\times$ 4
	44.44% $\times$ 5	40% $\times$ 5	50% $\times$ 5	63.63% $\times$ 5	44.44% $\times$ 5	40.91% $\times$ 5	55% $\times$ 5	60% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.78	Mean= 3.93	Mean= 4.04	Mean= 4.09	Mean= 3.75	Mean= 4.00	Mean= 4.10	Mean= 4.35

**Table 24** Father as educator (q. 4, 45, 46, 48)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 4. My father has contributed importantly to my education.	7.41% $\times$ 1	3.33% $\times$ 1	4.17% $\times$ 1	9.10% $\times$ 1	11.11% $\times$ 1	4.55% $\times$ 1		
	7.41% $\times$ 2	16.66% $\times$ 2	4.17% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	2.87% $\times$ 2	22.72% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2
	3.70% $\times$ 3	3.33% $\times$ 3	4.17% $\times$ 3	27.27% $\times$ 3	2.78% $\times$ 3		15% $\times$ 3	20% $\times$ 3
	18.52% $\times$ 4	23.33% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	13.89% $\times$ 4	4.55% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4
	62.96% $\times$ 5	53.33% $\times$ 5	62.50% $\times$ 5	45.45% $\times$ 5	69.44% $\times$ 5	68.18% $\times$ 5	55% $\times$ 5	60% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 4.22	Mean= 4.07	Mean= 3.38	Mean= 3.73	Mean= 4.28	Mean= 4.09	Mean= 4.00	Mean= 4.20



# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Table Continued...

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
45. My father sometimes (often) reads / read to me before going to bed / when I am / was ill.	59.26% <sup>x1</sup>	3.33% <sup>x1</sup>	33.33% <sup>x1</sup>	18.18% <sup>x1</sup>	61.11% <sup>x1</sup>	36.36% <sup>x1</sup>	25% <sup>x1</sup>	15% <sup>x1</sup>
	7.41% <sup>x2</sup>	6.66% <sup>x2</sup>	16.67% <sup>x2</sup>	9.10% <sup>x2</sup>	8.33% <sup>x2</sup>	13.64% <sup>x2</sup>	40% <sup>x2</sup>	15% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.41% <sup>x3</sup>	16.66% <sup>x3</sup>	8.33% <sup>x3</sup>	9.10% <sup>x3</sup>	13.89% <sup>x3</sup>	9.10% <sup>x3</sup>		
	14.81% <sup>x4</sup>	26.66% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	18.18% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	18.18% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	20% <sup>x4</sup>
	11.11% <sup>x5</sup>	16.66% <sup>x5</sup>	16.67% <sup>x5</sup>	45.45% <sup>x5</sup>	8.33% <sup>x5</sup>	18.18% <sup>x5</sup>	10% <sup>x5</sup>	50% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 2.11	Mean= 2.87	Mean= 2.75	Mean= 3.64	Mean= 1.94	Mean= 2.55	Mean= 2.55	Mean= 3.75
q. 46. My father often recommends / recommended me good reading.	9.63% <sup>x1</sup>	23.33% <sup>x1</sup>	20.83% <sup>x1</sup>	9.10% <sup>x1</sup>	19.44% <sup>x1</sup>	18.18% <sup>x1</sup>	20% <sup>x1</sup>	15% <sup>x1</sup>
	14.81% <sup>x2</sup>	16.66% <sup>x2</sup>	8.3% <sup>x2</sup>	18.18% <sup>x2</sup>	22.22% <sup>x2</sup>	13.64% <sup>x2</sup>	15% <sup>x2</sup>	20% <sup>x2</sup>
		10% <sup>x3</sup>	12.5% <sup>x3</sup>	9.10% <sup>x3</sup>	19.44% <sup>x3</sup>	22.72% <sup>x3</sup>	10% <sup>x3</sup>	10% <sup>x3</sup>
	29.63% <sup>x4</sup>	23.33% <sup>x4</sup>	20.83% <sup>x4</sup>		16.67% <sup>x4</sup>	13.64% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>
	25.92% <sup>x5</sup>	26.66% <sup>x5</sup>	37.5% <sup>x5</sup>	63.63% <sup>x5</sup>	22.22% <sup>x5</sup>	31.82% <sup>x5</sup>	30% <sup>x5</sup>	30% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.07	Mean= 3.13	Mean= 3.46	Mean= 3.91	Mean= 3.0	Mean= 3.27	Mean= 3.30	Mean= 3.35
q. 48. I like /liked when my father teaches / taught me (to do) various things.	7.41% <sup>x1</sup>			4.55% <sup>x1</sup>	13.89% <sup>x1</sup>	9.10% <sup>x1</sup>		
	7.41% <sup>x2</sup>	2.66% <sup>x2</sup>	4.17% <sup>x2</sup>	4.55% <sup>x2</sup>	13.89% <sup>x2</sup>	4.55% <sup>x2</sup>	10% <sup>x2</sup>	15% <sup>x2</sup>
	14.81% <sup>x3</sup>	13.33% <sup>x3</sup>			5.56% <sup>x3</sup>	13.64% <sup>x3</sup>		
	25.92% <sup>x4</sup>	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	27.27% <sup>x4</sup>	25.00% <sup>x4</sup>	36.36% <sup>x4</sup>	30% <sup>x4</sup>	20% <sup>x4</sup>
	44.44% <sup>x5</sup>	46.66% <sup>x5</sup>	70.83% <sup>x5</sup>	63.63% <sup>x5</sup>	41.67% <sup>x5</sup>	36.36% <sup>x5</sup>	60% <sup>x5</sup>	65% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.93	Mean= 4.20	Mean= 4.63	Mean= 4.04	Mean= 3.67	Mean= 3.86	Mean= 4.40	Mean= 4.35

**Table 25** Father as upbringer (the person who has influenced purposefully character formation) (q. 6, 56)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 6. My father has contributed importantly to my character formation (upbringing).	11.11% <sup>x1</sup>	6.66% <sup>x1</sup>		4.55% <sup>x1</sup>	2.78% <sup>x1</sup>	9.10% <sup>x1</sup>		
	3.70% <sup>x2</sup>	6.66% <sup>x2</sup>	4.17% <sup>x2</sup>	4.55% <sup>x2</sup>	11.11% <sup>x2</sup>	13.64% <sup>x2</sup>		
	7.41% <sup>x3</sup>		4.17% <sup>x3</sup>		16.67% <sup>x3</sup>	4.55% <sup>x3</sup>	25% <sup>x3</sup>	10% <sup>x3</sup>
	18.52% <sup>x4</sup>	33.33% <sup>x4</sup>	41.67% <sup>x4</sup>	18.18% <sup>x4</sup>	8.33% <sup>x4</sup>	27.27% <sup>x4</sup>	20% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>
	59.26% <sup>x5</sup>	53.33% <sup>x5</sup>	50% <sup>x5</sup>	72.72% <sup>x5</sup>	61.11% <sup>x5</sup>	45.45% <sup>x5</sup>	55% <sup>x5</sup>	65% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 4.11	Mean= 4.20	Mean= 4.38	Mean= 3.95	Mean= 4.14	Mean= 3.86	Mean= 4.30	Mean= 4.55
q. 56. My father has contributed to the formation of my values, as he has often discussed them with me.		6.66% <sup>x1</sup>	4.17% <sup>x1</sup>	4.55% <sup>x1</sup>	19.44% <sup>x1</sup>	13.64% <sup>x1</sup>		
	11.11% <sup>x2</sup>	23.33% <sup>x2</sup>	4.17% <sup>x2</sup>	4.55% <sup>x2</sup>	13.89% <sup>x2</sup>	18.18% <sup>x2</sup>	15% <sup>x2</sup>	10% <sup>x2</sup>
	7.41% <sup>x3</sup>				11.11% <sup>x3</sup>	22.72% <sup>x3</sup>		
	44.44% <sup>x4</sup>	20% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	27.27% <sup>x4</sup>	19.44% <sup>x4</sup>	9.10% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	20% <sup>x4</sup>
	29.63% <sup>x5</sup>	50% <sup>x5</sup>	66.67% <sup>x5</sup>	63.63% <sup>x5</sup>	36.11% <sup>x5</sup>	36.36% <sup>x5</sup>	60% <sup>x5</sup>	70% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 3.78	Mean= 3.83	Mean= 4.46	Mean= 4.41	Mean= 3.94	Mean= 3.36	Mean= 4.30	Mean= 4.50

**Table 26** Father as a Friend / Person to spend time / Share ideas with (q. 7, 8, 12, 22, 41, 42, 43)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 7. Whenever my father spends / spent time with me, it makes / made me happy.	3.71% <sup>x1</sup>	3.33% <sup>x1</sup>				9.10% <sup>x1</sup>		
	3.71% <sup>x2</sup>	3.33% <sup>x2</sup>			13.89% <sup>x2</sup>	4.55% <sup>x2</sup>		
	7.41% <sup>x3</sup>			9.10% <sup>x3</sup>	11.11% <sup>x3</sup>	4.55% <sup>x3</sup>		5% <sup>x3</sup>
	22.22% <sup>x4</sup>	13.33% <sup>x4</sup>	29.17% <sup>x4</sup>	9.10% <sup>x4</sup>	30.56% <sup>x4</sup>	9.10% <sup>x4</sup>	25% <sup>x4</sup>	15% <sup>x4</sup>
	62.69% <sup>x5</sup>	80% <sup>x5</sup>	70.83% <sup>x5</sup>	81.81% <sup>x5</sup>	44.44% <sup>x5</sup>	72.72% <sup>x5</sup>	75% <sup>x5</sup>	80% <sup>x5</sup>
	Mean= 4.19	Mean= 4.63	Mean= 4.71	Mean= 4.5	Mean= 4.06	Mean= 4.32	Mean= 4.75	Mean= 4.75

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Table Continued...

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 8. We often go / went together to places like stadium, park, relatives, friends, etc.	11.11%x1		4.17%x1	4.54%x1	11.11%x1	22.72%x1	10%x1	5%x1
	11.11%x2	6.66%x2	29.17%x2	4.54%x2	25%x2	13.64%x2	15%x2	10%x2
	7.41%x3	6.66%x3	16.67%x3	50%x3	8.33%x3	4.55%x3		
	40.74%x4	43.33%x4	20.83%x4	9.09%x4	27.78%x4	27.27%x4	25%x4	30%x4
	25.92%x5	43.33%x5	29.17%x5	31.82%x5	27.78%x5	31.82%x5	50%x5	55%x5
	Mean= 3.48	Mean= 4.23	Mean= 3.42	Mean= 3.55	Mean= 3.11	Mean= 3.32	Mean= 3.90	Mean= 4.2
q. 12. My father is / was my good friend.	11.11%x1	3.33%x1	8.33%x1	4.55%x1	11.11%x1	22.72%x1		
	11.11%x2	23.33%x2	4.17%x2	4.55%x2	13.89%x2	4.55%x2	5%x2	10%x2
	14.81%x3	6.66%x3	4.17%x3	9.10%x3	11.11%x3	13.64%x3	10%x3	5%x3
	2.22%x4	20%x4	37.5%x4	9.10%x4	27.78%x4	13.64%x4	35%x4	20%x4
	40.74%x5	46.66%x5	45.83%x5	72.72%x5	36.11%x5	45.45%x5	50%x5	65%x5
	Mean=3.70	Mean= 3.33	Mean= 4.08	Mean= 4.41	Mean= 3.08	Mean= 3.55	Mean= 4.30	Mean= 4.2
q. 22. I have shared many of my father's interests.	3.70%x1		8.33%x1	9.10%x1	16.67%x1	4.55%x1		
	14.81%x2	26.66%x2	8.33%x2	18.18%x2	16.67%x2		10%x2	5%x2
	11.11%x3	3.33%x3	15.5%x3		11.11%x3	22.72%x3	10%x3	5%x3
	44.44%x4	33.33%x4	45.83%x4	9.10%x4	33.33%x4	45.45%x4	35%x4	40%x4
	25.92%x5	36.66%x5	25%x5	3.63%x5	22.22%x5	27.27%x5	45%x5	50%x5
	Mean= 3.74	Mean= 3.80	Mean= 3.71	Mean= 4.0	Mean= 3.28	Mean= 3.91	Mean= 4.15	Mean= 4.35
q. 41. I like / liked having a good time with my father.	3.70%x1				5.56%x1	4.55%x1		
	7.41%x2	3.33%x2			8.33%x2	4.55%x2	5%x2	10%x2
	11.11%x3	3.33%x3		9.10%x3	5.56%x3	4.55%x3	5%x3	5%x3
	22.22%x4	6.66%x4	25%x4	27.27%x4	27.78%x4	3.64%x4	35%x4	30%x4
	55.55%x5	86.67%x5	75%x5	63.63%x5	52.78%x5	72.72%x5	55%x5	5%x5
	Mean= 4.19	Mean= 4.73	Mean= 4.75	Mean= 4.55	Mean= 4.14	Mean= 4.45	Mean= 4.40	Mean= 4.30
q. 42. I often do / did work together with my father.	18.52%x1	6.66%x1	15.5%x1	9.10%x1	8.33%x1	4.55%x1		
	14.81%x2	16.66%x2	16.67%x2	9.10%x2	8.33%x2	9.10%x2	10%x2	15%x2
	14.81%x3	10%x3	8.33%x3	9.10%x3	22.22%x3	22.72%x3		
	18.52%x4	33.33%x4	37.5%x4	18.18%x4	25.00%x4	31.82%x4	30%x4	35%x4
	37.04%x5	3.33%x5	25%x5	54.54%x5	36.11%x5	31.82%x5	60%x5	50%x5
	Mean=3.52	Mean= 3.70	Mean= 3.46	Mean= 4.00	Mean= 4.04	Mean= 3.77	Mean= 4.40	Mean= 4.20
q. 43. I like / liked spending holidays with my father.	11.11%x1	3.33%x1		2.78%x1				
		3.33%x2		11.11%x2	4.55%x2	9.10%x2	5%x2	5%x2
	7.41%x3	6.66%x3	4.17%x3	5.56%x3	4.55%x3		10%x3	5%x3
	25.92%x4	26.66%x4	16.67%x4	27.78%x4	31.82%x4	9.10%x4	35%x4	40%x4
	55.55%x5	60%x5	79.17%x5	52.78%x5	59.10%x5	1.81%x5	50%x5	50%x5
	Mean=4.15	Mean= 4.37	Mean= 4.75	Mean= 4.17	Mean= 4.45	Mean= 4.18	Mean=4.30	Mean=4.35

**Table 27** Uninvolved father (q. 2, 3, 9, 10, 13, 19, 26, 37, 38, 39, 40, 44, 47, 51)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 2. My father is / was too busy to spend enough time with me.	40.74%x1	33.33%x1	20.83%x1	36.36%x1	25%x1	45.45%x1	30%x1	25%x1
	29.63%x2	30%x2	25%x2	18.18%x2	25%x2	13.64%x2	25%x2	25%x2
		13.33%x3	8.33%x3		13.89%x3	9.10%x3	15%x3	10%x3
	25.93%x4	10%x4	37.5%x4	18.18%x4	19.44%x4	27.27%x4	20%x4	20%x4
	3.70%x5	13.33%x5	8.33%x5	27.27%x5	16.67%x5	4.55%x5	10%x5	20%x5
	Mean= 2.22	Mean= 2.40	Mean= 2.88	Mean= 2.82	Mean= 2.78	Mean= 2.32	Mean= 2.55	Mean= 2.85

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Table Continued...

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 3. When at home, my father does / did some business, spends / spent time in front of the computer and TV or reads / read newspapers.	29.63% 29.63% 7.41% 18.52% 14.81% Mean= 2.69	20% 33.33% 16.66% 16.66% 13.33% Mean= 2.70	25% 16.67% 20.83% 20.83% 16.67% Mean= 2.88	27.77% 25% 13.88% 16.66% 16.66% Mean= 2.69	22.72% 27.27% 13.64% 18.18% 18.18% Mean= 2.82	25% 30% 10% 20% 15% Mean= 2.70	9.10% 36.36% 31.81% 9.10% 13.64% Mean= 2.82	25% 15% 20% 20% 20% Mean= 2.95
q. 9. My father doesn't know my friends.	48.15% 14.81% 25.92% 11.11% Mean=2.46	40% 23.33% 13.33% 13.33% Mean= 2.37	50% 12.5% 20.83% 16.67% Mean= 2.42	63.63% 9.10% 13.64% 13.64% Mean= 2.14	44.44% 27.78% 8.33% 13.89% 5.56% Mean= 2.08	54.54% 4.55% 13.64% 13.64% 10% Mean= 2.27	30% 30% 20% 10% 10% Mean= 2.40	35% 30% 15% 10% 10% Mean= 2.30
q. 10. My father doesn't ask questions about my problems.	4.44% 18.52% 7.41% 11.11% 18.52% Mean=2.41	30% 16.66% 20% 16.66% 16.66% Mean= 2.73	54.17% 16.67% 8.33% 4.17% 16.67% Mean= 2.13	63.63% 16.67% 9.10% 13.64% 13.64% Mean= 2.14	36.11% 30.56% 13.89% 8.33% 11.11% Mean= 2.28	63.63% 4.55% 10% 13.64% 18.18% Mean= 2.18	30% 30% 10% 15% 15% Mean= 2.05	20% 40% 25% 15% 15% Mean= 2.75
q. 13. My father doesn't / didn't enough care for me.	74.07% 11.11% 3.70% 3.70% 7.41% Mean= 1.65	63.33% 26.66% 3.33% 3.33% 3.33% Mean= 1.57	75% 8.33% 8.33% 8.33% 16.66% Mean= 1.50	55.55% 8.33% 8.33% 11.11% 16.66% Mean= 2.25	68.18% 9.10% 4.55% 13.64% 4.55% Mean= 1.77	50% 15% 15% 20% 4.55% Mean= 2.05	81.81% 9.10% 5% 4.55% 4.55% Mean= 1.41	60% 15% 5% 20% 20% Mean= 1.85
q. 19. It wasn't / isn't my father who controlled whether I did/have done my lessons, came / come home on time, behave appropriately, etc.	51.85% 18.52% 7.41% 11.11% 11.11% Mean=2.11	46.66% 16.66% 10% 3.33% 23.33% Mean= 2.40	62.50% 16.67% 12.5% 8.33% 8.33% Mean= 1.88	63.63% 22.73% 9.10% 9.10% 4.55% Mean= 1.68	52.78% 13.89% 8.33% 11.11% 13.89% Mean=2.19	50% 18.18% 5% 22.72% 9.10% Mean= 2.23	40% 20% 10% 10% 25% Mean= 2.65	60% 20% 10% 30% 30% Mean= 2.50
q. 26. My father is / was a good person, but I wish he would learn / have learned to be a better father.	2.96% 7.41% 7.41% 7.41% 14.81% Mean=2.12	53.33% 6.66% 10% 16.66% 10% Mean= 2.03	45.83% 16.67% 16.67% 8.33% 12.5% Mean= 2.25	50% 19.44% 7.89% 7.89% 13.89% Mean= 2.17	59.10% 22.73% 9.10% 9.10% 9.10% Mean=1.86	54.54% 9.10% 18.18% 9.10% 9.10% Mean= 2.09	40% 25% 25% 25% 10% Mean= 2.40	40% 20% 30% 10% 10% Mean= 2.50
q. 37. My father has never (seldom) praised me.	62.96% 18.52% 11.11% 7.41% Mean=1.88	66.66% 6.66% 10% 16.66% Mean=1.93	70.83% 16.67% 4.17% 8.33% Mean=1.50	72.72% 4.55% 4.55% 9.10% Mean=1.77	33.33% 27.77% 13.88% 13.89% Mean=2.44	45.45% 18.18% 9.10% 4.55% Mean=2.00	35% 25% 15% 15% Mean=2.45	25% 25% 10% 20% Mean=2.85
q. 38. My father has never asked me about my interests, my favorite books, movies, etc.	48.15% 25.92% 7.41% 11.11% 7.41% Mean=2.12	43.33% 23.33% 3.33% 16.66% 13.33% Mean=2.33	50% 12.5% 16.67% 8.33% 12.5% Mean= 2.21	36.36% 36.36% 13.64% 9.10% 4.55% Mean= 2.09	27.78% 25.00% 16.67% 16.67% 13.89% Mean= 2.94	31.82% 27.27% 9.10% 18.18% 13.64% Mean= 2.09	30% 35% 25% 5% 5% Mean= 2.20	40% 35% 10% 5% 10% Mean= 2.10



# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Table Continued...

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 39. My father has never cooked for me, even when mother was absent or ill.	62.96% $\times$ 1	76.66% $\times$ 1	70.83% $\times$ 1	63.63% $\times$ 1	50% $\times$ 1	63.63% $\times$ 1	40% $\times$ 1	35% $\times$ 1
	14.81% $\times$ 2	13.33% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2	18.18% $\times$ 2	19.44% $\times$ 2	4.55% $\times$ 2	35% $\times$ 2	35% $\times$ 2
		3.33% $\times$ 3	4.17% $\times$ 3		2.78% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3
	11.11% $\times$ 4	3.33% $\times$ 4	8.33% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	8.33% $\times$ 4	13.64% $\times$ 4	5% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4
	11.11% $\times$ 5	3.33% $\times$ 5	4.17% $\times$ 5	9.10% $\times$ 5	19.44% $\times$ 5	9.10% $\times$ 5	5% $\times$ 5	10% $\times$ 5
	Mean=2.00	Mean= 1.43	Mean= 1.54	Mean= 1.82	Mean= 2.28	Mean= 2.00	Mean= 2.00	Mean= 2.25
q. 40. My father has never sat at my bed when I was ill.	70.37% $\times$ 1	80% $\times$ 1	79.17% $\times$ 1	63.63% $\times$ 1	63.88% $\times$ 1	68.18% $\times$ 1	40% $\times$ 1	40% $\times$ 1
	11.11% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	12.5% $\times$ 2	18.18% $\times$ 2	11.11% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	30% $\times$ 2	30% $\times$ 2
	7.41% $\times$ 3	6.66% $\times$ 3			13.88% $\times$ 3		15% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3
	3.70% $\times$ 4	3.33% $\times$ 4	4.17% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	8.33% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	15% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4
	7.41% $\times$ 5		4.17% $\times$ 5	9.10% $\times$ 5	8.33% $\times$ 5	13.64% $\times$ 5		10% $\times$ 5
	Mean=1.73	Mean= 1.33	Mean=1.42	Mean=1.82	Mean= 1.86	Mean=1.91	Mean=2.05	Mean= 2.20
q. 44. My father has never taken me to school or gone to parents' meeting.	55.55% $\times$ 1	46.66% $\times$ 1	45.83% $\times$ 1	36.36% $\times$ 1	36.11% $\times$ 1	54.54% $\times$ 1	30% $\times$ 1	15% $\times$ 1
	11.11% $\times$ 2	16.66% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2	18.18% $\times$ 2	19.44% $\times$ 2	13.64% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2
	3.70% $\times$ 3	6.66% $\times$ 3			16.67% $\times$ 3		15% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3
	7.41% $\times$ 4	13.33% $\times$ 4	20.83% $\times$ 4	18.18% $\times$ 4	13.89% $\times$ 4	13.64% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4	35% $\times$ 4
	22.22% $\times$ 5	16.66% $\times$ 5	25% $\times$ 5	27.27% $\times$ 5	13.89% $\times$ 5	18.18% $\times$ 5	20% $\times$ 5	25% $\times$ 5
	Mean=2.38	Mean= 2.37	Mean=2.71	Mean=2.82	Mean=2.50	Mean= 2.27	Mean= 2.95	Mean= 3.45
q. 47. My father never (seldom) shares /shared information about his work.	40.74% $\times$ 1	33.33% $\times$ 1	16.67% $\times$ 1	27.27% $\times$ 1	30.55% $\times$ 1	13.64% $\times$ 1	25% $\times$ 1	20% $\times$ 1
	11.11% $\times$ 2	20% $\times$ 2	37.5% $\times$ 2	27.27% $\times$ 2	11.11% $\times$ 2	31.82% $\times$ 2	25% $\times$ 2	25% $\times$ 2
	29.63% $\times$ 3	30% $\times$ 3	20.83% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	25% $\times$ 3	18.18% $\times$ 3	35% $\times$ 3	40% $\times$ 3
	7.41% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4	12.5% $\times$ 4		16.66% $\times$ 4	27.27% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4
	11.11% $\times$ 5	6.66% $\times$ 5	12.5% $\times$ 5	36.36% $\times$ 5	16.66% $\times$ 5	9.10% $\times$ 5	5% $\times$ 5	5% $\times$ 5
	Mean=2.15	Mean= 2.37	Mean=2.67	Mean= 2.91	Mean= 2.78	Mean= 2.86	Mean= 2.45	Mean= 2.55
q. 51. My father is / was a good man, but not a good father.	18.52% $\times$ 1	43.33% $\times$ 1	45.83% $\times$ 1	59.10% $\times$ 1	27.77% $\times$ 1	27.27% $\times$ 1	30% $\times$ 1	25% $\times$ 1
	25.92% $\times$ 2	6.66% $\times$ 2	29.17% $\times$ 2	22.73% $\times$ 2	22.22% $\times$ 2	13.64% $\times$ 2	20% $\times$ 2	25% $\times$ 2
	18.52% $\times$ 3	13.33% $\times$ 3	12.5% $\times$ 3		11.11% $\times$ 3	18.18% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3
	18.52% $\times$ 4	30% $\times$ 4	12.5% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4	19.44% $\times$ 4	18.18% $\times$ 4	15% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4
	14.81% $\times$ 5	6.66% $\times$ 5		9.10% $\times$ 5	19.44% $\times$ 5	22.72% $\times$ 5	20% $\times$ 5	15% $\times$ 5
	Mean=2.84	Mean=2.50	Mean=1.91	Mean=1.86	Mean=2.53	Mean=2.95	Mean=2.75	Mean=2.75

**Table 28** Father who hurts (q. 15, 16, 20, 36)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 15. My father often hurts (hurt) my feelings because he doesn't (didn't) understand them.	55.55% $\times$ 1	73.33% $\times$ 1	75% $\times$ 1	72.72% $\times$ 1	44.44% $\times$ 1	68.18% $\times$ 1	60% $\times$ 1	55% $\times$ 1
	11.11% $\times$ 2	6.66% $\times$ 2	12.5% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	22.22% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	20% $\times$ 2	15% $\times$ 2
	14.81% $\times$ 3	6.66% $\times$ 3	12.5% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	11.11% $\times$ 3	13.64% $\times$ 3	10% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3
	11.11% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4			8.33% $\times$ 4	4.55% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4	15% $\times$ 4
	7.41% $\times$ 5	3.33% $\times$ 5		9.10% $\times$ 5	13.88% $\times$ 5	4.55% $\times$ 5		
	Mean=2.04	Mean= 1.63	Mean=1.38	Mean=1.64	Mean= 2.25	Mean= 1.68	Mean=1.70	Mean=1.90
q. 16. My father purposefully hurts (hurt) my feelings.	92.59% $\times$ 1	76.66% $\times$ 1	95.83% $\times$ 1	95.45% $\times$ 1	83.33% $\times$ 1	68.68% $\times$ 1	60% $\times$ 1	60% $\times$ 1
		6.66% $\times$ 2	4.17% $\times$ 2	4.55% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2		15% $\times$ 2	20% $\times$ 2
	7.41% $\times$ 3	6.66% $\times$ 3			2.77% $\times$ 3	18.18% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3	20% $\times$ 3
		6.66% $\times$ 4			5.55% $\times$ 4	9.10% $\times$ 4		
		3.33% $\times$ 5				4.55% $\times$ 5	10% $\times$ 5	
	Mean=1.15	Mean=1.53	Mean=1.04	Mean=1.05	Mean=1.31	Mean=1.82	Mean=1.85	Mean=1.60

# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Table Continued...

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 20. My father is / was often strict with me and punishes / punished me.	66.66%x1	63.33%x1	58.33%x1	81.81%x1	52.77%x1	54.54%x1	40%x1	40%x1
	18.52%x2	13.33%x2	29.17%x2	9.10%x2	22.22%x2	18.18%x2	40%x2	35%x2
	11.11%x3	6.66%x3	4.17%x3		13.88%x3	4.55%x3	10%x3	15%x3
	3.70%x4	13.33%x4	4.17%x4	9.10%x4	8.33%x4	3.64%x4	10%x4	10%x4
		3.33%x5	4.17%x5		2.76%x5	9.10%x5		
	Mean=1.52	Mean=1.80	Mean=1.67	Mean=1.36	Mean=1.86	Mean=2.05	Mean=1.90	Mean=1.95
q. 36. My father has never applied rough physical power against me.	7.41%x1	13.33%x1	8.33%x1	4.55%x1	13.88%x1	9.10%x1		
	3.70%x2	6.66%x2	4.17%x2	4.55%x2	5.55%x2	9.10%x2	10%x2	5%x2
	3.70%x3				5.55%x3	9.10%x3	10%x3	10%x3
		6.66%x4			16.66%x4	18.18%x4	15%x4	15%x4
	85.18%x5	73.33%x5	87.5%x5	90.90%x5	5.83%x5	59.10%x5	65%x5	70%x5
	Mean= 4.52	Mean=4.20	Mean=4.75	Mean=4.68	Mean= 4.0	Mean=4.05	Mean=4.35	Mean=4.45

**Table 29** Child (not) caring for the father, not feeling close with father (q. 30, 31, 49, 54)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 30. I always care about my father's opinions on various issues.	3.70%x1	3.33%x1		9.10%x1	5.55%x1	9.10%x1	5%x1	
	11.11%x2	13.33%x2			5.55%x2	4.55%x2	10%x2	15%x2
	22.22%x3	16.66%x3	8.33%x3	13.64%x3	5.55%x3	18.18%x3	15%x3	
	25.92%x4	26.66%x4	41.67%x4	22.73%x4	30.55%x4	36.36%x4	20%x4	20%x4
	37.04%x5	40%x5	50%x5	54.54%x5	52.77%x5	36.36%x5	50%x5	65%x5
	Mean= 3.81	Mean= 3.87	Mean=4.42	Mean=4.14	Mean= 4.19	Mean= 3.86	Mean=4.00	Mean= 4.35
q. 31. I seldom or never follow my father's advice.	44.44%x1	36.66%x1	54.17%x1	90.90%x1	27.77%x1	36.36%x1	45%x1	35%x1
	22.22%x2	30%x2	25%x2		30.55%x2	13.64%x2	15%x2	15%x2
	7.41%x3	10%x3	8.33%x3	4.55%x3	19.44%x3	13.64%x3	10%x3	10%x3
	18.52%x4	16.66%x4	8.33%x4	4.55%x4	19.44%x4	36.36%x4	15%x4	20%x4
	7.41%x5	6.66%x5	4.17%x5		2.77%x5	2.39	15%x5	20%x5
	Mean=2.22	Mean=2.27	Mean=1.83	Mean=1.23	Mean=2.39	Mean=2.50	Mean=2.40	Mean=2.75
q. 33. I cannot speak to my father on some personal topics.	9.63%x1	33.33%x1	25%x1		16.66%x1	22.72%x1	30%x1	25%x1
	14.81%x2	13.33%x2	25%x2	45.45%x2	11.11%x2	13.64%x2	20%x2	20%x2
	11.11%x3	3.33%x3	8.33%x3	27.27%x3	22.22%x3	3.64%x3	5%x3	15%x3
	18.52%x4	26.66%x4	20.83%x4	13.64%x4	16.66%x4	27.27%x4	20%x4	20%x4
	25.92%x5	23.33%x5	20.83%x5	13.64%x5	33.33%x5	22.72%x5	25%x5	20%x5
	Mean=2.96	Mean=2.93	Mean=2.88	Mean=2.95	Mean=2.72	Mean=1.92	Mean=2.90	Mean=2.90
q. 49. I don't really care about my father's life and problems.	70.37%x1	83.33%x1	75%x1	81.81%x1	63.88%x1	59.10%x1	65%x1	85%x1
	14.81%x2	13.33%x2	16.67%x2	9.10%x2	8.33%x2	22.72%x2	20%x2	15%x2
	3.70%x3		4.17%x3		11.11%x3	9.10%x3	15%x3	
	7.41%x4	3.33%x4	4.17%x4	9.10%x4	8.33%x4	9.10%x4		
	3.70%x5				8.33%x5			
	Mean=1.59	Mean=1.23	Mean=1.38	Mean=1.36	Mean=1.89	Mean=1.68	Mean=1.50	Mean=1.15
q. 54. I love my father; but we didn't / don't have close relationships	40.74%x1	43.33%x1	50%x1	63.63%x1	30.55%x1	45.45%x1	45%x1	55%x1
	7.41%x2	10%x2	8.33%x2	18.18%x2	16.66%x2	22.72%x2	25%x2	20%x2
	14.81%x3	10%x3	12.5%x3		11.11%x3	4.55%x3		
	25.92%x4	10%x4	12.5%x4	9.10%x4	25%x4	9.10%x4	20%x4	15%x4
	11.11%x5	26.66%x5	16.67%x5	9.10%x5	16.66%x5	18.18%x5	10%x5	10%x5
	Mean=2.59	Mean=2.57	Mean=2.38	Mean=1.82	Mean=2.81	Mean=2.32	Mean=2.25	Mean=2.05

**Table 30** Can involved fatherhood be taught? (q.27, 28)

Questions	Females, aged				Males, aged			
	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more	14-19	20-39	40-59	60 and more
q. 27. I don't think caring fatherhood can be taught.	29.63% $\times$ 1	20% $\times$ 1	29.17% $\times$ 1		19.44% $\times$ 1	18.18% $\times$ 1	20% $\times$ 1	20% $\times$ 1
	7.41% $\times$ 2	33.33% $\times$ 2	8.33% $\times$ 2		11.11% $\times$ 2	36.36% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2
	18.52% $\times$ 3	13.33% $\times$ 3	12.5% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	25% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	20% $\times$ 3	15% $\times$ 3
	22.22% $\times$ 4	13.33% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4	18.18% $\times$ 4	22.22% $\times$ 4	22.72% $\times$ 4	15% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4
	22.22% $\times$ 5	20.00% $\times$ 5	25% $\times$ 5	72.72% $\times$ 5	22.22% $\times$ 5	13.64% $\times$ 5	35% $\times$ 5	45% $\times$ 5
	Mean= 3.0	Mean= 2.8	Mean=3.08	Mean=4.64	Mean=3.17	Mean=2.77	Mean=3.35	Mean=3.50
q. 28. I believe it would do my father good if he attended some courses about parents-to-children relationships.	44.44% $\times$ 1	33.33% $\times$ 1	50% $\times$ 1	72.72% $\times$ 1	47.22% $\times$ 1	36.36% $\times$ 1	15% $\times$ 1	25% $\times$ 1
	18.52% $\times$ 2	10% $\times$ 2	16.67% $\times$ 2	9.10% $\times$ 2	16.66% $\times$ 2	22.72% $\times$ 2	30% $\times$ 2	35% $\times$ 2
	7.41% $\times$ 3	26.66% $\times$ 3	12.5% $\times$ 3	9.10% $\times$ 3	16.66% $\times$ 3	13.64% $\times$ 3	30% $\times$ 3	20% $\times$ 3
	18.52% $\times$ 4	10% $\times$ 4	8.33% $\times$ 4		11.11% $\times$ 4	18.18% $\times$ 4	25% $\times$ 4	20% $\times$ 4
	11.11% $\times$ 5	20% $\times$ 5	12.5% $\times$ 5	9.10% $\times$ 5	8.33% $\times$ 5	9.10% $\times$ 5		
	Mean=1.78	Mean=2.73	Mean=2.17	Mean=1.64	Mean=2.17	Mean=2.41	Mean=2.65	Mean=2.35

## Data collection and analysis

The information about the questionnaire and a request about filling it out was placed on the social media. For the Turkish version of the questionnaire Google forms were used which simplified the data collection and analysis process, while, as Georgian fonts are not available on Google forms, so the questionnaires were placed on the Facebook with a request to the researcher's friends (who are over 400 in number) to share it on their pages and to participate in the survey. Before finally submitting the questionnaire, both variants were piloted with 8 people each (representing both genders and each age category), to find out whether any questions were vague or inappropriate). Data analysis was carried out with the help of Excls.

When the mean result was above three, it was viewed as a positive answer. It is necessary to take into consideration that the items formulated in reversed way (e.g., my father's role in my life is/was less than my mother's) an assessment below three is viewed as a good one. The percentages were rounded up to decimals, while mean results to hundredths. The mean points were calculated as follows: the number of respondents who gave the corresponding point multiplied by this point; all the multiplication results summed up and divided by the number of respondents, e.g.

$$(4 \times 1 + 5 \times 2 + 6 \times 3 + 6 \times 4 + 2 \times 5): 23 = 2.87$$

## Respondents

The respondents were from various parts of Georgia and Turkey (as I and my colleagues have friends on the social media all over our countries), and included all age categories. When – initially – it turned out that there were relatively few (fewer than 20) respondents of the above-60 category, an additional request was placed on the social media to provide more respondents of that category. The respondents were volunteers and may be viewed as randomly selected, as they were really “chance” people whose eye came across the announcement. Their number is not too big (492 respondents whose papers were accepted as fully and correctly filled in), but may be viewed as representative.

Turkish respondents: total number of respondents – initially 291; number of respondents left after discarding questionnaires containing unreliable answers - 289.

1) Females – total number - 146: 14-19 (38 respondents); 20-39 (62 respondents); 40-59 (21 respondents); 60 and more (25 respondents);

2) Males - total number 143: 14-19 (35 respondents); 20-39 (61 respondents); 40-59 (24 respondents); 60 and more (23 respondents).

Georgian respondents: total number of respondents – initially 205; number of respondents left after discarding questionnaires containing unreliable answers – 203.

1) Females – total number 103 - 14-19 (27 respondents); 20-39 (30 respondents); 40-59 (24 respondents); 60 and more (22 respondents);

2) Males - total number 100 - 14-19 (36 respondents); 20-39 (22 respondents); 40-59 (22 respondents); 60 and more (20 respondents).

Some practically duplicating questions were embedded in the questionnaire (e.g. 7 & 41). If the respondent's answers to these questions differed by more than 1 point, the questionnaire filled in by that respondent was discarded, as the answers were viewed as unreliable. Totally 5 respondents' answers were discarded, due to this factor or when answers to some items were not provided by them (Tables 3 to 30).

Item 1: father is not less important than mother for both genders and all generations, however, his importance compared to that of mother's has been decreasing with generations (1.80  $\square$  2.76 and 2.87  $\square$  2.44). Father, according to the answers, is a bit more important compared to mother for female respondents than for males, which may be an unexpected result for those who believe that fathers are more important for boys than for girls.

Item 52: Father's role in general is important for both genders and all age categories, however, the importance for both genders has been increasing with generations (3.24  $\square$  4.05 and 3.17  $\square$  4.88), and the numbers for male respondents, except the eldest generation, are a bit higher than for female ones.

Item 32: The results of taking sides with either father or mother indicate that the majority of the respondents seldom enough do it (2.21  $\square$  2.86), however, females older than 60 and males between 40 and 59 more often take father's side than mother's (3.13  $\square$  3.36).



All respondents believe that both their fathers and their relations with fathers are typical enough for their country (all mean results above 3, minimum 3.13, maximum 3.77).

Except the youngest generation (mean results below 3), for others, irrespective the gender, it is more often the father who makes the decisions (3.6 2.89 for females and 4.08 □ 2.94 for male respondents), however, his role in decision making is decreasing with generations.

However, fathers often made decisions together with their daughters or sons (all mean results are above 3.0).

Table 4 Father as a Human / Professional Model (q. 17, 21)

The majority of respondents are proud of their fathers both as humans and as professionals (the mean is above 4), irrespective gender or generation.

On the other hand, female respondents seldom take after father's profession / occupation (mean results below 3), and so do males except the younger generation. Only many among 14-19-year-olds plan to follow father's steps (mean results above 3). For the female respondents this is not surprising, as they choose typically women's professions, but the only explanation we have for male students is that they probably choose higher level professions. Of course, to know the cause for sure, further investigation is needed.

Father has been a gender model for all generations and both genders (mean results above 3, minimum 3.3, maximum 4.0).

Not surprisingly, father has contributed a lot to the kind of woman / man the respondents grew up (the mean results are 4 or higher). On the other hand, surprisingly for those believe that presence of father in the family is crucial for boys, but not so important for girls, female respondents even higher appreciated their father's role in their formation as women (4.00-4.12) than boys did so in their formation as men (4.0-4.04).

Fathers for whom no man is good enough to become their daughter's husband are not too numerous, but do constitute a certain problem (mean results 2.87-2.96).

Girls often are looking for a man as good as their father (whom they probably idealize), which may become a problem for their family life (mean results above 3 for 20-39-year-olds (mean results 3.11-3.33; for older generation the mean result is 2.72, which is not very high, but tangible enough). While father need to be taught to be more liberal concerning their future husbands, daughters need to be taught that their father, however good, is not the only worthy man in the world.

Item 23: both genders and all generations relied on the father as problem-solver (all mean results above 3, even close to or more than 4: 3.79-4.36). However, the results are to some degree decreasing with generations (4.36□3.79 and 4.0□3.86, correspondingly), which means that children are becoming less reliant on fathers, which is not a very positive feature.

Item 24: both genders and all generations are supported by the father (all mean results close to or more than 4: 3.74-4.04). However, the results are to some degree decreasing with generations (4.08□3.97 and 4.04□3.74), which means that children are less supported by fathers nowadays, which is not a very positive feature.

Item 55: both genders and all generations are motivated by the father (all mean results close to or more than 4: 3.91-4.35). However, the results are to some degree decreasing with generations (4.35□4.00 and 4.30□3.91), which means that children are less supported by fathers nowadays, which is not a very positive feature.

Item 5: both genders view father as a clever man (all mean results are close to 4 or above it: minimum 3.83 – maximum 4.13).

Item 11: correspondingly, they often ask his advice (mean results are between 3.73 and 4.35). Boys (minimum 3.8 and maximum 4.35) ask father's advice more often than girls (minimum 3.73 and maximum 4.04) do, which is natural, as men cannot understand some typical female issues.

Item 4: the majority of the respondents of both genders and all generations confirm that father contributed to their education (the answers, all above 3, range from 3.14 to 4.63).

Item 46: unfortunately, fathers seldom read to their children (all answers are below 3, they range between 1.82 and 2.96), which needs to be changed. However they must realize the value of reading, as they do recommend their daughters and sons good reading (all means are above 3, minimum 3.09 and maximum 3.88).

Item 48: The children value fathers' contributions to education (all mean results are above 3, minimum – 3.57 and maximum 4.31).

Item 6: The majority of the respondents of both genders admit that their father contributed to their character formation (all means are above 3, minimum 3.30 and maximum 4.16).

Item 56: the same can be said about father's roles in children's value formation (all means above 3, minimum 3.26 and maximum 4.17).

Item 56: the same can be said about father's roles in children's value formation (all means above 3, minimum 3.26 and maximum 4.17).

Items 7, 41, and 43 dealing with how children like spending time with fathers yielded the following mean results: the majority of the respondents of all ages and both genders really like it (all means are equal to or above 4, minimum 4.00, and maximum 4.39). Item 8 concerning going to different places together gave the following mean results: the respondents reasonably often state that they go/went somewhere with their fathers (all means are above 3: minimum – 3.03, and maximum – 3.29). It is essential that they more often visit places together.

Item 12 deals with friendship between father and children. Many enough respondents agreed to this statement (all means are above 3, minimum 3.03 and maximum 3.58), however, female respondents (means between 3.10 and 3.58) more often feel that father is their friend than do male students (means between 3.03 and 3.49) do, which is not very good (fathers and sons should be closes to each other.)

Item 22: female respondents do not often share father's interests (all means are below 3, minimum is 2.58 and maximum – 2.96), and this is natural enough; male respondents more or less share their fathers' interests, however, it is desirable that the results are higher (all means are above 3, minimum 3.08 and maximum 3.39).

Item 42: often doing things together: many respondents of both genders and all generations often do things together, however, male respondents (all answers are above 3, minimum - 3.66 and maximum - 4.21) do it more often than females (all answers are above 3, minimum - 3.18, maximum - 3.84), which is natural.

To item 2 (father is/was too busy to spend time with me) the majority of answers in both genders and all generations are negative (mean below 3; minimum - 2.04, maximum-2.81).

To item 3, which reveals that some fathers, even if they have time, avoid sparing it to their children, the majority of answers in both genders and all generations are negative (mean below 3, minimum 2.79, maximum - 2.96), however, there are more positive answers than to question2, which is not very good. Fathers should realize that they have to spend time with their children.

To item 19, 39, 40, 44, which deal with various activities related to their children that fathers should do the majority of answers in both genders and all generations are negative (mean below 3; minimum -1.68, maximum-2.97). What is pleasant is that what concerns with the child's health, the majority of answers are below 2, which is a really negative answer (minimum 1.68 and maximum 2.35). It means that fathers are really caring when it concerns their child's health.

As for items 9, 10, 38, and 47, which deal with moral care which does not require much time, the majority of answers in both genders and all generations are negative (mean below 3; minimum -2.02, maximum -2.98).

From all these items it is visible that on the whole we cannot complain that fathers are uninvolved, however, there are many enough who are.

Concerning father praising or not praising his children (item 37), they do often enough praise their children, irrespective of gender (the question is in reversed format, so the low response results stand for the good answer: all mean results are below 3, minimum - 1.76, maximum 2.65).

Items 13, 26, 51 assess whether children would like their fathers to be better ones. The majority of both genders and all generations disagree with this statement (all mean results are below 3, minimum 1.76, maximum 2.98).

On the whole it is possible to see that the majority of the respondents do not view their fathers as uninvolved ones, however the voices of those who are not quite satisfied with the existing situation are quite well heard.

Items 15, 16, and 20 are in reversed format (the lower the point, the better the answer). They deal with father hurting children's feelings and being too strict. The mean results are all below 3, many below 2, which is a good result (minimum 1.33, maximum 2.78). It is good that the numbers for purposefully hurting (1.89-964 are lower than the numbers for just hurting (1.52-2.65), however, it still means that fathers need to learn to be more tactful.

Item 36 shows that the fathers of the majority of respondents do not apply corporal punishment (all mean results equal or are above 4, minimum 3.52, maximum 4.08) but a few still do, which needs to be changed.

The results on the whole are good, but still some fathers do hurt and apply rough physical power, which is inappropriate.

Item 30 deals with children caring about father's opinions. The mean results are close to or above 4, which is a good result (minimum 3.80, maximum 4.20).

Items 31, 33, 49, and 54 are in invert format (so, the lower the results, the better). All mean results are below 3 (minimum 1.68, maximum 2.98), which is a normal result. Strangely, male students (2.87-2.98) gave a bit higher assessment to the item 33 than females (2.79-2.95), which means that they are less open with the father than females, which is an unexpected result. Probably, it deals with men's reserved nature, but, of course, further research is needed to find out the reason.

Item 27 is in reversed format (the lower the answer, the better): the results show that the majority of respondents (except young females, aged 14-19) respondents do not think caring fatherhood can be taught (the mean results are above: minimum 3.19, maximum 3.59). More than half young females (aged 14-19) believe that caring fatherhood can be taught. This leaves some hope that they will bring up their sons as caring fathers. It is very important to change others' opinion. Otherwise it would be impossible to try to provide information, discussions and trainings for them.

Item 28: however, many enough respondents want their fathers to attend some courses on caring fatherhood (mean results are above 3, minimum 3.09, maximum 3.63). What for, if they do not think it can change anything. Probably, they did not understand well the meaning of one of these items. Anyway, the results reveal that the respondents do not think their relationships with fathers are as good as they would like them to be.

## Results of the questionnaire held in Georgia

Item 1: father is not less important than mother for females and males aged 14-39; for others he used to be a less important figure. His importance compared to that of mother's has been growing with generations (4.32  $\square$  2.56 and 4.00  $\square$  2.33). Compared to Turkish respondents, anyway, father is a less important figure. There is something to worry about.

Item 52: father, according to the answers, is to some degree more important compared to mother for female respondents (4.91-4.37) than for males (4.35-3.38), which contradicts the traditional view on the issue and which proves that daughters no less if not more need a father or at least another fatherly figure. What is definitely troublesome is that father's role is decreasing with generations, which may be a dangerous trend.

Item 32: although father's role in general is important for both genders and all age categories (3.09  $\square$  1.89 for females and 2.70  $\square$  2.67 for males), the results of taking sides with either father or mother indicate that the majority of the respondents seldom enough do it, however, females older than 60 (mean 3.09) more often take father's side than mother's ("daddy's daughters").

All respondents believe that both their fathers and their relations with fathers are typical enough for their country (all mean results are above 3, minimum 3.08, maximum 4.14).

Except the youngest generation, it is more often the father who makes the decisions (3.18  $\square$  2.0 for females and 4.3  $\square$  2.97 for male respondents). However, his role in decision making is decreasing with generations.

On the other hand, fathers often made decisions together with their daughters or sons (all mean results are above 3), but the joint decision making is decreasing (females:  $4.09 \square 3.44$ ; males  $4.1 \square 3.78$ ), so fathers are becoming somehow less caring or / and kids more independent. With Turkish respondents there is no certain trend of decrease or growth in numbers of joint decision making, the numbers are just fluctuating.

The majority of respondents are proud of their fathers both as humans and as professionals (the mean is above 4, minimum 4.11, maximum 4.75), irrespective gender or generation.

On the other hand, female respondents seldom take after father's profession / occupation (mean results below 3), while many enough males in the older generations followed father's way (mean results above 3, minimum 3.00, maximum 3.40). Young males, however, quite seldom follow father's profession (mean results 2.89). For the female respondents (minimum 1.55, maximum 2.79) this is not surprising, as they choose typically women's professions. For male students in Georgia it used to be typical enough to follow father's profession, however, today, probably due to some professions becoming obsolete or due to larger choice of professions, young males prefer not to follow their father's way. Of course, to know the cause for sure, further investigation is needed.

Item 18: father has been a gender model for all generations and both genders (mean results above 3), however, for females his gender model role has been decreasing with generations ( $4.27 \square 3.38$ ), while for males the results are sometimes growing and sometimes decreasing ( $3.27 \square 4.26$ )

Item 25: not surprisingly, father has contributed a lot to the kind of woman / man the respondents grew up (the mean results are 3 or higher, minimum, maximum), but the results for young females (3.41) is lower than for Turkish respondents (4.07). Contrary to Turkish respondents, Georgian male respondents higher appreciated their fathers' roles in their formation (3.82-4.85) as men than girls appreciated their role in their formation as women (3.41-4.18).

Item 34: fathers for whom no man is good enough to become their daughter's husband are quite few, but do constitute a certain problem (mean results in all age groups are below 2, minimum 1.63, maximum 1.92).

Item 35: girls are sometimes looking for a man as good as their father (whom they probably idealize), which may become a problem for their family life (mean results are below), however, compared to Turkish females, this is evidently seldom a problem for Georgian females (minimum 1.63, maximum 1.75). However, all girls have to learn to be realistic.

Both genders and all generations relied on the father as problem-solver (all mean results close to 4 or above it: 3.89-4.50). However, the results are to some degree decreasing with generations ( $4.18 \square 4.0$  and  $4.50 \square 3.89$ , correspondingly), which means that children are becoming less reliant on fathers, which is not a very positive feature.

Both genders and all generations are supported by the father (all mean results close to or more than 4: 3.96-4.50). However, the results are to some degree decreasing with generations ( $4.41 \square 3.96$  and  $4.50 \square 4.11$ ), which means that children are less supported by fathers nowadays, which is not a very positive feature.

Both genders and all generations are motivated by the father (all mean results are more than 3: 3.67-4.41). However, the results are to some degree decreasing with generations ( $4.41 \square 3.67$  and  $4.35 \square 3.58$ ), which means that children are less motivated by fathers nowadays, which is not a very positive feature.

Both genders view father as a clever man (all mean results are close to 4 or above it: minimum 3.86 – max. 4.63). Correspondingly, they often ask his advice (mean results are between 3.79 and 4.35). Boys (minimum 3.75 and maximum 4.35) ask father's advice more often than girls (min. 3.78 and max. 4.09) do.

Item 4: the majority of the respondents of both genders and all generations confirm that father contributed to their education (the answers, all 3 or above, range from 3.38 to 4.28).

Item 45: unfortunately, fathers seldom read to their children. All answers are below 3 (range from 1.94 to 2.87), except the eldest generation (range between 3.64 and 3.75), and the situation was worsening from generation to generation.

Item 46: however they must realize the value of reading, as they do recommend their daughters and sons good reading (all means are above 3, minimum 3.00 and maximum 3.91), but the results are decreasing from generation to generation, which is not good. The children value fathers' contributions to education (all mean results are above 3, minimum – 3.86 and maximum 4.63).

Item 6: the majority of the respondents of both genders admit that their father contributed to their character formation (all means are well above 3, minimum 3.86 and maximum 4.55).

Item 56: the same can be said about father's roles in children's value formation (all means above 3, minimum 3.36 and maximum 4.50). The points are higher than with Turkish respondents.

Items 7, 41, and 43 dealing with how children like spending time with fathers yielded the following mean results: the majority of the respondents of all ages and both genders really like it (all means are equal to or above 4, minimum 4.00, and maximum 4.75).

Item 8 concerning going to different places together gave the following mean results: the respondents reasonably often state that they go/went somewhere with their fathers (all means are above 3: minimum – 3.32, and maximum – 4.23).

Item 12 deals with friendship between father and children. Quite many respondents agreed to this statement (all mean results are above 3, minimum 3.08 and maximum 4.30).

Item 22: Contrary to Turkey, respondents of both genders often share fathers' interests, but male respondents (all mean results are above 3, minimum – 3.28 and maximum – 4.00) share them more often than female (all mean results are above 3, minimum – 3.82 and maximum – 4.35) ones, which is quite natural.

Item 42: often doing things together: many respondents of both genders and all generations often do things together, however, male respondents (all answers are above 3, minimum - 3.77 and maximum –4.40) do it more often than females (all answers are above 3, minimum - 3.46, maximum – 4.00), which is natural.

To item 2 (father is/was too busy to spend time with me) the majority of answers in both genders and all generations are negative (mean below 3; minimum 2.04, maximum 2.88).



To item 3, which reveals that some fathers, even if they have time, avoid sparing it to their children, the majority of answers in both genders and all generations are negative (mean below 3, minimum 2.69, maximum – 2.95), however, there are more positive answers than to question 2, which is not very good. Fathers should realize that they have to spend time with their children.

To items 19, 39, 40, 44, which deal with various activities related to their children that fathers should do the majority of answers in both genders and all generations are negative (except item 44, males ages 60 and above, all mean results are below 3; minimum –1.33, maximum –2.95). As for taking children to school (item 44), fathers of elder generation did not often do it, as children in those times normally lived near the schools they attended (for females the answers of generations aged 41-60 and 60 and above the minimum average result is 2.71 and maximum – 2.82, while for males of the same age – minimum 2.95 and maximum 3.45, correspondingly; boys used to be more independent than girls, this is why more male respondents agreed with the statement). What is pleasant is that what concerns with the child's health, the majority of answers are below 2, which is a really negative answer (minimum 1.33 and maximum 2.0). It means that fathers are really caring when it concerns their child's health. □ As for items 9, 10, 38, and 47, which deal with moral care which does not require much time, the majority of answers in both genders and all generations are negative (mean below 3; minimum –2.08, maximum –2.96).

Analogously to the Turkish respondents, from all these items it is visible that on the whole we cannot complain that fathers are uninvolved, however, there are many enough who are.

Concerning father praising or not praising his children (item 37), they do often enough praise their children, irrespective of gender (the question is in reversed format, so the low response results stand for the good answer: female respondents got lower mean results, below 2 (minimum 1.50, maximum – 1.93), while male respondents got mean results below 3 (minimum – 2.00, maximum – 2.85). It means that Georgian fathers more often praise daughters than sons.

Items 13, 26, 51 assess whether children would like their fathers to be better ones. The majority of both genders and all generations disagree with this statement (all mean results are below 3, even many are below 2; minimum – 1.41, maximum – 2.96), thus, they are quite happy about what kind of fathers they have, but still there is a tangible number of those who are not quite happy.

On the whole it is possible to see that the majority of the respondents do not view their fathers as uninvolved ones, however the voices of those who are not quite satisfied with the existing situation are quite well heard.

Items 15, 16, and 20 are in reversed format (the lower the point, the better the answer). They deal with father hurting children's feelings and being too strict. The mean results are all below 3, many below 2, which is a good result (minimum 1.04, maximum 2.25). It is possible to see that fathers are softer to daughters (1.38-2.04; 1.04-1.53; 1.36-1.80) compared to sons (1.68-2.25; 1.31-1.85; 1.86-2.05). It is good that the numbers for purposefully hurting (1.04-1.85) are lower than the numbers for just hurting (1.38-2.04), however, it means that fathers need to learn to be more tactful.

Item 36 shows that the fathers of the majority of respondents do not apply corporal punishment, but a few still do, which needs to be changed (all mean results equal or are above 4, minimum 3.52, maximum 4.08).

The results on the whole are good, but still fathers do hurt and apply rough physical power, which is inappropriate. Item 36 shows that the fathers of the majority of the respondents do not apply corporal punishment.

Item 30 deals with children caring about father's opinions. The mean results are close or above 4, which is a good result (minimum 3.81, maximum 4.42). Items 31, 33, 49, and 54 are in inverted format, so the lower the results, the better. All mean results are below 3 (minimum 1.15, maximum 2.96), which is a normal result.

Item 27 is in reversed format (the lower the answer, the better): the results show that about half of the respondents do not think caring fatherhood can be taught (the mean results are about 3: minimum 2.77, maximum 3.50). It is very important to change their opinion. Otherwise it would be impossible to try to provide information, discussions and trainings for them.

Item 28: Naturally, not too many respondents want their fathers to attend some courses on caring fatherhood (mean results are below 3, minimum 1.64, maximum 2.73).

## Conclusion

While the numbers in comments to results reflect the mean results, in the conclusions we give the percentage of positive answers (by summing up the "completely agree" and the "agree" answers).

- 1) There are no big differences between countries, genders and generations, except a couple of issues. The general picture is good enough, however, some typical fathers' roles are declining and some have never been fulfilled too well
- 2) The role of father both in Turkey and in Georgia is great, for daughters, contrary to the widely spread opinion, today he is a no less important figure than for sons (38-39% of Turkish females aged 14-39 say so; 26-77% of Georgian females of all generations claim so), so fathers have to take it into consideration.
- 3) Our societies are quite traditional, so fathers' role and relations with him was assessed as traditional by the majority of the respondents (34-76% of Turkish respondents believe so, 36-70% of Georgian respondents think so).
- 4) Father's role in decision making is declining (52% of Turkish females aged 60 and above assessed it positively, while only 29% of Turkish females aged 14-19 did the same; 78% of Turkish males aged 60 and above assessed it positively, while only 26% of Turkish males aged 14-19 did the same, 85% of Georgian males aged 60 and above assessed it positively, while only 25% of Georgian males aged 14-19 did the same; 82% of Georgian females aged 60 and above assessed it positively, while only 11% of Georgian females aged 14-19 did the same) most probably partly due to the increase of women's role growth in the issue, but might be because contemporary fathers sometimes avoid taking responsibility (but, to make certain conclusions, it needs further research).

- 5) Father is a human, professional and gender model for the respondents (61-88% of the Turkish respondents, 74-92% of the Georgian respondents) however they seldom enough follow his profession (8-24% for Turkish females, 23-48% for Turkish males; 17-41% for Georgian females and 30-65% for Georgian males), which is absolutely normal. For daughters father sometimes is too critical to their potential partners, and they should realize that they should not behave so. Besides, some daughters tend to idealize fathers and due to it have problems finding life companions, which is to be avoided.
- 6) The perception of father as a supporter / protector / motivator is still quite strong, but is somehow declining (for the Turkish respondents from 88/73%, according to genders, it has fallen to 71/68%; for Georgian respondents - for females it hasn't fallen, but, vice versa, grew 73 081%, while for males it has fallen from 90% to 68%). The decline of father's perception as a supporter has to be stopped.

Contemporary fathers should not and cannot be patriarchic and authoritarian, but they should not abandon their function of child protection. This has to be brought to the minds of some of them.

- 1) Authoritative father has nothing to do with authoritarian father, the former has to maintain his positions, while the latter needs to be taught to be more humanistic. In both countries father does have an authority for most respondents: they ask him questions (63-78% of positive answers for the Turkish respondents; 69-86% of positive answers for the Georgian respondents), and ask him advice (58-87% of positive answers for the Turkish respondents; 63-90% of positive answers for the Georgian respondents).
- 2) Although the respondents from both countries mostly value father's role in their education (43-89% of positive answers for the Turkish respondents; 55-82% of positive answers for the Georgian respondents) (probably in financing their education – this also has to be researched further), fathers almost do not read to their children (the percentage of positive answers fluctuates in Turkey between 19% and 41%; and between 17% to 70% in Georgia. For eldest generation the assessment was the highest, which means that this wonderful form of education and communication is fading away – the tendency that has to be stopped).
- 3) Fathers do have an impact on character formation of both genders, however it is not as far as desirable (48% minimum and 90% maximum assess the item positively, according to generations and genders in Turkey and 69% minimum and 92% maximum in Georgia). They also do contribute to value formation (48% minimum and maximum 92% assess the item positively in Turkey and 45% minimum and 92% maximum in Georgia), but it is desirable that his role in this direction should be stronger. Generally, today there is a trend that both parents care about financial issues, children's health and entertainment (which is needed), but often forget about communication, education, spending time together, etc.
- 4) The results for spending time together with children not good in Turkey (26% minimum, and 43% maximum positive answers), and to some degree better Georgia (50% minimum, and maximum 85%), which still is not enough. Families need to spend more time all together.

- 5) 11-30% of the Turkish respondents claim that father sometimes hurts their feelings, while the Georgian respondents who claim so constitute minimum 17% and maximum 30% of the various age and gender groups. The numbers are not too high, but they need to be minimized. As for purposefully hurting, the numbers are lower (between 0% and 25% for the Turkish respondents and 0% and 13% – for the Georgian ones), which means that if we educate fathers how to be more tactful, we can decrease the numbers.
- 6) Nothing can be unilateral, if children expect father to care for them, they also have to care for their fathers, which generally is so, according to the obtained answers: the positive answers for the Turkish respondents constitute minimum 65% and maximum 92%, while for the Georgian respondents - minimum 63% and maximum 92%.
- 7) Although the questionnaire was absolutely anonymous, it seems that the respondents sometimes wanted to present the situation better than it really is. Although the answers to issues dealing with uninvolved fathers yielded low results (average means below 3, some items even below 2), to the statement that they would like their father to be a better father the answers are relatively high: in Turkey minimum – 2.04, maximum-2.81. And in Georgia - minimum 1.76, maximum 2.98). One may say that kids are too critical and want too much, but still it means that the situation is not as cloudless as many of us would like to think. Learning to be good a good father is not enough just to follow the sample (hopefully, a good sample) of one's father or friends. It is time to get such education, as the knowledge-based society requires.
- 8) We believe that fathers need to be helped to be better fathers by the pedagogical society – by school, mass-media, etc. However it will not be easy, taking into consideration how busy they are and – the most importance – the wrong belief that everything is normal and the prejudice that caring fatherhood cannot be taught (43-75% of the Turkish and 33-91% of the Georgian respondents think so, according to age and gender groups). In Turkey the percentage is lower due to the fact that parent education system exists there and yields quite good results.

## Content analysis of interview on engaged fatherhood

From Journal of Education in Black Sea Region, 7(2), 125-140

### Abstract

The article involves an exploratory study. It mainly reviews articles published in 2010s dealing with fatherhood issue. It has revealed that the typical behaviour of fathers nowadays is related with the changes in society concerning the understanding of masculinity and femininity. The relatively new concept of caring masculinity is being reflected in legislation of many countries, however, there are barriers to its realization due to employer resistance. The society should realize that it benefits from father involvement in child's life (engagement in child's entertainment and educational activities, moral and financial responsibility for the child), as happier and more stable families have to be borne in mind while creating obstacles to fathers sharing the baby care with mothers. A convenience purposive sampling was applied to hold an interview with researchers. Ten people from nine various

countries responded to interview questions placed on Academia platform. The keywords in the answers were codified, and their frequency was counted. It was concluded that father engagement vs. father involvement and father absence from the child's life corresponds to the needs of contemporary society. Father engagement has individual (child, father) and social benefits, as well as individual benefits include medical, social, cognitive, and psychological benefits.

**Keywords:** fatherhood, masculinity, father engagement, caring masculinity, hegemonic masculinity.

## Introduction

Children are our future, and parents are the first people who have an impact on them. As there are too many publications<sup>271-274</sup> dealing with mother's or both parents' role in children's lives – their emotional state, cognitive and physical development, future careers and families, etc., while father's role has been relatively understudied, I decided to dedicate this article (as part of a series of such articles) to the analysis of the articles dedicated to fathers' roles in children's lives. The presented below literature review deals with most recent researches on the topic, as I have tried to notice some new trends in the researches and the dynamics in the roles and their assessment. Based on the literature review, questions for an interview were developed, piloted and then uploaded to Academia platform for experts to answer them.

## Literature review

Although much has changed in the father role in the family by the beginning of the 21st century, many men still stick to the typically masculine behavior. According to Petts et al.<sup>275</sup> those of 2,194 fathers from a national study on fathers of children aged 2 to 18 who maintained the traditional masculine role of provider and organizer mostly demonstrated limited engagement with their children, while fathers who did not adhere too much with the traditional fathers' roles demonstrated nurturing parenting. Hunter et al.<sup>276</sup> share their opinion of the type of masculinity the man follows and state that 'caring masculinity' is often theorised as a radical shift away from traditional or hegemonic forms of masculinity, while in reality it is rather a broadening type of hegemonic masculinity than an entirely new model of male behaviour.

Azumah, Krampah, and Nachinaab (2018) dedicated their study to the effects of family structure (full or single-parent family) on the academic performance of children in Ghana. They found that among single-parent families about 5% of children live with a single father, 16% live without any parent, while 81% live with single mothers. At an early age, over half of all children still live with both parents and this percentage declines with age. Youngsters brought up in agreeable, two-parent family units have a tendency to do academically better than youngsters in single parent families many of whom do not even enter school. An "organized dually headed family unit gives sufficient parental contribution, guidance, hope, support, time, and direction" (ibid, p.13). Mothers normally contribute to raising and household training, while the fathers - to budgetary commitments and supervision of youngsters. If/when mother is not educated enough to control the regular studies of the kids, father is expected to do so. Azumah et al.<sup>277</sup> cite Ortesse (1998) who found that most children whose fathers have been missing while they were at ages one to five of life were more mentally, psychopathically and criminalistic in

nature than those whose guardians were accessible during this period. Azumah et al.<sup>277</sup> in their survey found that 42.50% of the respondents indicated that their parent/s sometimes do supervise them in regularly fulfilling homework and punctually attending school, while 31.25% revealed that their parent/s always do so.

Henry et al.<sup>278</sup> held a systematic search of four major research databases and analyzed 44 studies published between 1988 and 2018. The interventions described in the given studies were conducted in the following 10 countries: United States (28 of them), United Kingdom, Canada, Ireland, India, South Africa, Australia, Uganda, Norway, and Germany. Fathers were between 16 and 66 years old, whereas the ages of their children ranged from infancy to adulthood. Participant sample sizes across studies ranged from 5 to 5,102 participants. The marital status of the participating fathers varied as well. The majority of the fathers in 19 studies were married or cohabitating with their partner. In 11 studies, the majority of fathers were unmarried nor living with their partners. Fourteen studies did not state the marital status of the participating fathers. In six studies, fathers were reported as married; however, they were not married to the participating child's mother. Fifteen studies included in this review employed experimental designs. Of the 16 studies that employed non-experimental designs, 5 studies employed mixed methods, while three were qualitative studies. Henry et al.<sup>278</sup> found that the positive father involvement is critical to the healthy social, emotional, and academic outcomes of children at all stages of development.

Jessee and Adamsons<sup>279</sup> in a study of 2,970 U.S. families revealed that fathers' relationships with their children are positively associated with the fathers' (when they were children) relationships with their fathers. As the tendency is to pass the relationships down the generations, it is especially important to work with future/young fathers in order to provide the growth of the positive tendency (and not vice versa, as, unfortunately is often the case).

According to Hamilton et al.,<sup>280</sup> more than one-third of all births in the United States in the beginning of the 21st century took place outside of marriage. Nowadays the situation, most probably, has not improved. It is only natural that in this context many researches are dedicated to non-resident fathers and their relationships with their children. A non-resident parent is a parent who does not live in the same household as the child. A non-resident parent may be divorced, separated, or never-married to the child's custodial parent.

Augustine et al.,<sup>281</sup> held longitudinal in-depth interviews with 171 low-income noncustodial fathers living in low-income neighborhoods across the Philadelphia metropolitan area came to conclusion that many fathers who have children beyond marriage belong to low-income social layer. Both interviewees and interviewers were of different ethnicities and races. Interviewers were both male and female. The interviewees were mostly not interested in either marriage or having children, as they thought they could not afford it. Correspondingly, the children who were born in this kind of relationships were accidental (where the man believed that pregnancy was impossible), irresponsibly born (the man did not think about the possible consequences), and only 15% of them were planned (as single mothers receive some allowances). Interestingly, among 'just not thinking' fathers were men of various ages.



Logically enough, not only non-resident fathers demonstrate less care for their children than resident ones, also, in turn, children of divorced parents more rarely care for their elderly fathers than for their elderly mothers.<sup>282</sup> In Jenkinson, Matsuo and Matthis,<sup>283</sup> study fathers with non-residential children below 18 reported lower life satisfaction than non-residential mothers. They found little analogous evidence of gender differences between lone mothers and fathers who report residential children. Living in complete families makes life more enjoyable for everybody, not only children! Maslauskaitė and Tereškinas<sup>284</sup> in their study of 1,225 non-resident fathers of children under 18 revealed that the frequency of contacts, child support payments and co-parenting are beneficial to the level of intimacy and approval in father-child relationships. Non-resident fathers equally care for sons and daughters, and the geographic distance between them and the child did not reveal any impact on the intimacy between the father and the kids. Neither had having children in the new family did. Social loneliness and depressive feelings are inversely linked with “caring for” type of fathering, while fathers with a higher sense of being in charge of their lives report more intimacy and approval in relationships.

Ros Pilarz et al.<sup>285</sup> conducted a study dealing with fathers' work schedule and their engagement with their children. They analyzed data of 1,598 resident and 759 nonresident US fathers. It was shown that both resident and non-resident fathers' engagement is related to non-standard work schedule. Work in evening hours, as well as extra working hours negatively impact fathers' engagement with their children, while working a variable schedule was associated with greater responsibility relative to other nonstandard schedules. To my mind, not as a researcher, but as a mother of two children, of course, things are not that simple, and it is not just the time spent by the father with his children, but the quality of that time as well.

Reilly<sup>286</sup> studied the role of fathers in indigenous nations in Australia. He held analysis of all available (nine) qualitative studies (descriptive analyses, narrative descriptions, and interviews) across ten years. His findings reveal that close relations between fathers and children help not only children's, but also fathers' development.

Baldwin et al.,<sup>287</sup> studied the impact of the support offered to the first-time fathers by London health visitor services. The topic of the article is extremely interesting, as not only first-time mothers, but also first-time fathers experience ante and postnatal stress (10%) and anxiety (18%),<sup>288,289</sup> however, such practices are not very well spread in the world. 45 questionnaires were fully filled in and then analyzed, besides ten interviews were held. The majority of the participants confirmed that they were satisfied with the service offered and supported the idea of fathers' contacts with health professionals before and after their first children birth.

According to Li,<sup>290</sup> Chinese fathers used to be emotionally distant educators and disciplinarians of their children as well as heads of the household. This has been changing recently, but the change has been too slow. “Their participation in their children's lives benefits children's adjustment, possibly through secure father-child attachment, and is influenced by the relationship between fathers and mothers” (p.150).

Cano, Perales and Baxter<sup>291</sup> observed in a longitudinal study more than 3,000 children aged four to eight in Australia. They found

that, while the increase of time spent by fathers with their kids caused little increase in children's cognitive development, the increase of their time spent on educational activities yielded from moderate to large improvements. This is an important finding, as many parents believe that just playing or watching cartoons together contributes to their children's cognitive development. Simply spending time together matters a lot for emotional bonds between children and parents and thus is important, but it is not sufficient.

Parents' socio-economic status (SES) has an indirect impact of children's academic achievement. Although not necessarily a child with a low-SES father demonstrates low academic achievement, statistically this is the trend. When/if low-SES fathers' involvement in their children's education increases, the gap in academic achievements of low and high-SES fathers' children narrows. This is what Miller et al.,<sup>292</sup> study has shown. While the reason why low-SES fathers often withdraw from their children's studies is fathers' low level of education, this barrier can be overcome by father and child studying together.

While father ‘involvement’ is a general term, ‘cohabitation’ and ‘engagement’ are more exact ones.<sup>256,293–295</sup> According to SarKadi et al.,<sup>296</sup> father involvement unites his accessibility (cohabitation), engagement in activities, responsibility for the child or other complex measures of involvement. She analyzed 24 publications on the topic and found that the fact of the father living in the family (whether married or not) correlates with less externalising behavioural problems in children, especially boys, whereas his engagement not only decreases boys' behavioural problems and girls' psychological problems, but also enhances cognitive development.

Since the 1970s Swedish family policies have encouraged fathers to be involved in their children's lives from infancy onward. In 1974 they introduced the law on sharing childcare by mothers and fathers. Starting with 2002 the part of the leave taken by the father became compulsory.<sup>297</sup> Cools et al.,<sup>298</sup> found that the introduction of legislation that permits fathers to take a paternity leave (especially in Scandinavian countries) increases father engagement with children. The study also showed a dramatic increase in children's academic achievement in those family where father was staying at home with the child, especially in those families where the level of the father's education was higher than that of mother's. In the same line, Andersen<sup>299</sup> held a study of the impact of 5 Danish parental leave reforms on 5 separate samples of all households who become first-time parents within the year before and after each reform (N1=2,304; N2=45,683; N3=16,668; N4=42,328; N5=38,978). He found that father sharing the leave to look after the baby decreased the gap between the mothers' and fathers' salaries and even in many cases increased the family income.

While in Scandinavian countries 3 months-long paternity leave is an obligation,<sup>300</sup> in order to promote father engagement and, eventually, happier families, in other countries the inclusion of paternal leaves into legislation has not yet helped much to change the situation. Peukert,<sup>301</sup> for instance, has shown that employers in Germany hinder fathers from equally sharing childcare with mothers. More than that, his in-depth interviews with couples revealed that some of them (including women) perceive that sharing the childcare leave may ‘undo’ the very concept of masculinity. Kangas et al.,<sup>302</sup> even state that “though involved fatherhood is emerging in many western societies, a family-

oriented male identity is likely to be problematic for men in organizations” (p. 1433).

Wells et al.,<sup>303</sup> held in Canada a project called Shift. They stress that father involvement prevents domestic violence in the next generation. They emphasize the role of positive father involvement for “the child’s social, emotional, cognitive and physical health” (p.1). Their modeling behavior promotes gender equity. Dozois et al.,<sup>304</sup> in continuation of Shift project state that most children in Canada live with their fathers. In fact, in 2006, 80% of fathers lived with their children full time. The number of fathers who take the leave to look after their kids is slowly growing: 10% in 2008 compared to 4% in 1976. According to them, “Positive Parenting is associated with qualities related to an authoritative parenting style, which include: supporting the child’s sense of identity and independence within warm and responsive relationships, having high and consistent expectations about behaviour, maturity and complying with authority; using positive disciplinary methods rather than corporal punishment.<sup>304</sup> It supports the child’s emotional, cognitive, and social well-being, and reduces the child’s behavioural problems. It also leads to “: developing healthy masculinity norms and increasing gender equality” (ibid, p. 10), which are based on caring and respect. It also increases fathers’ well-being and decreases violence in families and society. In a large survey by ... as cited by Dozois et al.,<sup>304</sup> it was found that “in a large survey of over 2500 Canadian parents, only 27% of fathers agreed strongly with the statement ‘I think Canada values the role of fathers.’ By contrast, 51% agreed strongly that ‘Canada values the role of mothers’” (p.13). This is why the researchers, although Canada is a country where the majority of fathers are involved (but not necessarily engaged), are addressing the government to fund more programs developing men’s parenting strategies.

Compared to such countries as Canada, South African fathers are often absent from their children’s lives and when present, often abuse them. South Africa has the lowest marriage rate on the continent;<sup>305</sup> the second highest rate of father absence in Africa (after Namibia);<sup>305</sup> low rates of paternal maintenance for children (Khunou, 2006 as cited in Richter, Chikovore, & Makusha, 2010); and shockingly high rates of abuse and neglect of children by men.<sup>305</sup> That is why Morrell’s<sup>306</sup> book emphasizes how important fatherhood is in the lives of both children and men. The author argues that involved fatherhood could contribute significantly to the health of South African society by caring for their children. Becoming Baba can heal men as well, make them more humane, states the author.

Pablo et al.<sup>307</sup> found that in Mongolia children’s health state correlated significantly with mother care and not significantly correlated with father care. This indicates that care for children’s health in Mongolia is still mostly on mothers’ shoulders.

## Method

The current study aimed to understand whether there have been changes in fatherhood understanding in the last decade. Therefore, the conducted study is of exploratory nature. “**Exploratory research** is a methodology approach that investigates research questions that have not previously been studied in depth. Exploratory research is often qualitative in nature.”<sup>308</sup>

A convenience purposive sample was applied to select the participants of an interview. According to Andrade,<sup>309</sup> “a

convenience sample is the one that is drawn from a source that is conveniently accessible to the researcher. A purposive sample is the one whose characteristics are defined for a purpose that is relevant to the study. The findings of a study based on convenience and purposive sampling can only be generalized to the (sub) population from which the sample is drawn and not to the entire population.” However, the findings of the study can be valuable to gain an insight on the studied problem.<sup>310</sup>

## Tool

The questions for the written interview, developed by the researcher based on the literature analysis were as follows: What is your opinion concerning active father involvement in childcare (financial responsibility, sharing maternity / paternity leave, taking part in entertainment and educational activities)?

Do you think that engaged fatherhood is a recent phenomenon? Why (not)? Or maybe that it has increased recently?

Has your father (other male caretaker) been (was your father) an engaged or a remote one? Can you provide some examples?

Question for male respondents with children of any age: Do you see yourself as an engaged father?

What benefits do you see in engaged fatherhood?

What risks (for male role, employers, and society) do you see in it?

The questions were piloted with three experts of the area.

## Participants

1,144 participants subscribed to Academia network who deal with similar topics were invited. Ten researchers answered the given open-ended questions developed based on the analysis in the article. The participants were volunteers who were informed about the fact that their interviews would be analyzed in the article and their answers would remain anonymous. Five of them were females and six males. They came from the following countries: Austria, Eswatini (former Swaziland), Georgia, Gyana (residing in the UK) Italy (x2), Japan, Kenya, Poland, South Africa, and the US. This variety of countries was very valuable, as it provided a kaleidoscope of opinions.

## Results

In the results section some most interesting answers to the interview questions will be provided, as well as their content analysis (frequency of keywords).

### Q1:

I think the beneficial effects are not only for the child, who grows up in an environment with more gender equity, but also for the father, who sees his well-being increase and has more time available for other activities.

I believe positive active father involvement in the care of their children offers benefits to fathers, mothers, children, and all of society. Positive, healthy, interacting family members help children thrive in all areas of life. A child who is loved and valued by both parents begins life with a sense of security and a sense of personal worth that enhances self-development, leading to school retention and positive scholastic outcomes. This foundation in childhood and youth provides society with new strong confident generations.

The beneficial effects of fathers' involvement on children's socio-cognitive development have been proven. The socio-productive structure of many countries, including Italy, which still has a deeply patriarchal form, remains a problem. Men tend to have the highest salary, and often the restricted welfare measures do not allow to reduce men's work involvement in favour of a greater presence in the family. The dual-earner family model is increasingly emerging, but the economic uncertainty that often was mainly related to women workers is now common to men workers as well, further hindering men's involvement in childcare.

## Q2:

As long as active fathers aren't pointed by our fingers and we don't perceive them as something rare, they are majority. As you have noticed "among single-parent families about 5% of children live with a single father, 16% live without any parent, while 81% live with single mothers." That adds up to 102%, actually, but it indicates that most fathers want to take responsibility for their families, and let us not forget that fatherlessness became a problem when women went to work. I'm not trying to blame women for this, I'm trying to point out that before they went to work they were simply unable to throw away men from their lives, what is I believe the most common scenario of lonely maternity.

Taking lessons from my father, engaged fatherhood has always been effected, especially in providing essential resources for the family. However, this role was based on gender roles. Currently, fathers have bridged the gender barrier, hence they are actively involved in baby care (feeding, changing diapers, and the total care of children).

Over time the division of labor has changed within families. In the past, because men were not first-line caregivers, did not mean they were not "engaged" in their family's interests and well-being. For hundreds of years the fathers' role in the family was that of "breadwinner". Put very simplistically, as "breadwinner" fathers were responsible for providing for their family's needs, while mothers tended home and children. Fathers may have been "remote", but they were engaged as they provided for their family's needs, whether they were laborers, working 10-12 hours/day, blue-collar workers, or professionals.

## Q3:

My father was a professional athlete and was away from home six months each year for the first 14 years of my life. During the winters and throughout my teen years, we ate dinner together as a family. At dinner we talked about family and community issues; our father was always interested to learn what had happened at school. He encouraged us to invite friends into the house and when they visited, he stopped what he was doing and interacted with them. Because my father was a good listener, I was comfortable confiding in him and found his advice to be solid. An important conversation occurred at the beginning of my junior year in high school as I was considering my major in college. Dad talked to me through possible scenarios in 4-5 different education and career paths, then he let me make up my own mind. During college, he helped me solve problems in a variety of classes and helped me manage a difficult issue at work. His encouragement helped me not to drop the course during a particularly difficult semester. The summer after college graduation, at the age of 21, and 10 days before my wedding, he said to me, "You have not seemed

happy for a long time, I want you to know that you do not have to get married; there is still time to send regret notes." I exclaimed, "Dad! But what about the money we have already spent?" He said, "Don't worry about the money, if you want to, all you have to do is just call this wedding off and go to Hawaii." Two days later I flew to Honolulu, Hawaii. Dad gave me courage to make the best choices of my life.

My father was a university researcher and was often at home. He was certainly also a caretaker: for example, when I was a child I often had respiratory problems, and in winter he even took me to the seaside for a month to keep me well. But this was possible because of the nature of his work. At the same time, however, all sentimental and emotional education was absent on the male side: for example, I never saw my father cry, and his message was always about dedication to his work.

My father took an active part in raising me. He was engaged financially and emotionally. Do you want me to tell you a short story about my childhood, about trips we went to, about games we played, about events we celebrated? I believe all that was just fine, I really don't have anything to complain about.

## Q4:

I consider myself an engaged father, or rather, I try to be. I have two children aged 6 and 4, and I do various activities with them. With my wife, we share tasks related to their home life as well as their school and social life. On working days, I spend two afternoons out of five with them, my wife the other two, and one afternoon a week they are with the babysitter. At home, I mainly take care of the kitchen (doing the washing up and preparing the meals), while my wife takes care of their hygiene. During the week I drop them off and pick them up from school, play with them in the afternoons (e.g. we draw, read books, do tickle fights), or take them to the park to play with their friends. I often take the little one to drama class in the afternoon and the big one to aikido class. In addition, I am a class representative at my older son's primary school. This organisation allows us both to carve out 3 full days a week for our professions and still have time to spend with our children. On my side, this is possible because I am a research fellow in a research institute, with no time constraints or presence in the office. The time I don't spend working I make up for in the evenings or at weekends.

Yes, I am an engaged father. I have two beautiful children, a boy and a girl. Fathering to me is the most fulfilling job a man can have. God gave you as a father (a gift) to your family (wife and children), and God gave your children (and wife) (a gift) to you as a father. Fathers should engage in productive activities with their children for example household chores, washing dishes, cleaning up, etc. Such shared activities promote a sense of responsibility and significance such as greater self-esteem, academic and occupational achievement, psychological well-being, civic engagement, etc.

## Q5:

Active father involvement: Fatherhood is much more! Attributes such as nurturing, time spending (children cry out, daddy we need your presence and not your presents. His physical role at home is paramount. He has a huge responsibility towards his family in aspects such as security; acceptance (applicable towards his children); handle disappointments; have a listening ear to listen,



encourage his children not to make bad choices, and tell them, if they did, that failure is not final!

I see an engaged father as one who is available to offer real support and timely encouragement to his children. In my dissertation research I interviewed families in which fathers were supportive of their daughter's giftedness. Because of the qualitative nature of my research, my findings were reported in the voices of each participant, and in many situations, when their responses were similar, one voice spoke for many. Here, I will present some of their responses that seem to have direct bearing on your question: Fathers in my study said they felt spending time at home with their children was important because time together provided opportunities to work and play together, to support, motivate, listen, and / or offer encouragement. These fathers said encouragement came in different forms, sometimes their daughters needed hope, or courage, other times they needed confidence. In their own voices—four daughters: Elena: He was always around. And when he wasn't I always waited for him because we had such a fun time when he got home. Meg: Because he made a point of being at home after school, he was there when I needed him. If I ever needed help with homework, he'd try to help me. I'd go to him before Mom. Finally, as a senior when I was taking calculus he'd say, well, you've gone ahead of me there! Suzanne: Now I call, and I say things like, "Dad, I'm fed up with school, what should I do?" or "Come see me and celebrate my birthday at Easter!" My Dad let me know that if I ever wanted to come home and I couldn't come get a ride, he would come get me. Several times during my freshman year he made the trip up here so I could be home for four days at a time. New years the weather was yucky, he took off work and drove me back to school. I made him stay overnight with one of the guys I know that had an extra bed and he stayed there. When I go home on vacation now, I always spend extra time with him. Julia: Now that I am in college, I don't know how much our relationship has changed from his end. I think I appreciate him more. I think most people would say that about parents. I look forward to talking to him. It is interesting to compare notes with him, telling him about what is going on and discussions about stuff I'm learning about, you know, I'll hear something related to what he knows, and I'll ask him about it. I think I have a stronger sense that I know him better, a stronger sense of pride in him. It was his 50th birthday this weekend and it was fun to see how many people know and like my dad. It was something I hadn't picked up on quite as much when I was younger. These fathers believed it was their responsibility to pay attention to their daughter's needs and provide safe environments in which to explore; this included such things as building playground equipment in the back yard or taking their daughters along on field trips; later, their father's encouragement to take advantage of course offerings in the gifted programs helped the girls explore and excel intellectually. The fathers stated that encouragement "takes many forms" and identified attending parent-teacher conferences and being present at extra-curricular activities as encouraging. Fathers reported that encouraging their children seemed to come naturally as though it was an integral part of parenting. These fathers continued to encourage their daughters as they grew. One father said he encouraged his daughter to be well-rounded. Another father seconded that sentiment when he noticed his daughter becoming a bit of an "egghead" he wanted to motivate her to be well-rounded, so he talked to her about extra-curricular activities and

attended as many of her activities as he could. In a longitudinal piece of the research one daughter talked about her father's valuable encouragement and guidance as she was considering taking her career down a different path and began looking into various Ph.D. programs. (from: *The Structure of the Relationship between Fathers and their Gifted Daughters that is Supportive of Giftedness: A grounded theory.* (2002). S.L.K. Blanchfield.).

## Q 6:

Risks associated with the caring father would be those associated with female gender; physical, emotional, psychological, and financial abuse; social stigma, limited chances for professional development, exclusion from career development due to taking time off work to attend to child needs.

Not all societies are ready to understand the importance of male involvement. This results in still inadequate social protection systems and the labor market tends to discourage male workers from requiring more time to devote to parental care.

As for the 6th question, if I've understood it correctly, the excessive father's involvement in child's life sometimes creates risk that in future the child won't be independent enough and able to take some proper decision by himself/herself. As for the girl, she can expect from the people (men, employers, society) she comes across the same caring attention she has received from her father. I think father should be actively involved in the upbringing process of his child. His participation in child's life shouldn't be limited only by his financial support. He should spend more time with his children. Involved fathers enhance their children's communication skills because they tend to ask children more questions than mothers do. Children, whose fathers are actively involved in their lives (taking care of them, playing together, and teaching them), tend to be more confident and, in future as they grow older, they have stronger social connections with peers.

I fear discrimination and marginalisation at work (e.g. career blocking, becoming a victim of jokes) or in the peer group (e.g. male friends, sporting activities), especially if this involvement is not supported at the public level by policy and welfare (Table 31).

Concerning the first question, the interviewees' answers very much coincide with literature review. However, there are some things to be commented on. First, the total number of answers dealing with (pleasant) spending time together (45) greatly exceeds the answers dealing with educational activities of fathers (19), which reveals that fathers are insufficiently associated with children's education, which is not good, especially taking into consideration that (especially in less-developed countries) fathers' educational level is often higher than that of mothers. Besides, the social benefits of involved fatherhood (20) exceed in the answers the cognitive (8) and the psychological (8) ones, to say nothing of children's health (1). This indicates that engaged fatherhood is insufficiently linked in people's consciousness in other-than-social aspects.

Concerning the second question, the majority of the respondents (7) believe that involved fatherhood is not a new issue, but the character of involvement has changed: it has shifted from financial aspects to direct care starting with the time when women became an important labour force component (second half of the 20<sup>th</sup> century). One respondent dropped this question, one thinks that this is a relatively new issue, while one that it is

quite novel. I find one respondent's answer important: 'poverty, employment opportunities, discrimination and racism' have an impact on choosing the model 'no involvement', 'father financial involvement only', or 'father multilateral engagement'. Whilst

the first model is harmful for children, their fathers and society, the second model is outdated, and the only fruitful model today is the third one.

**Table 31** Frequency of key concepts applied in interviewees' answers

	Answers	n	Keywords	n
Involved fatherhood includes:	Availability (available)	3	(at) home	3
			around	3
			attend	3
			present/presence	3
	Financial support (support financially)	7	pay/paycheck	2
			money	3
	Spending time together	23	fun	2
			play	11
			shared activities/tasks	3
			entertain/entertainment	3
			celebrations / celebrate	2
			cinema, theatre, opera	1
	Educating	8	study	1
			lesson(s)	1
			teach/teacher	5
			mentor	4
	Upbringing	2	values	5
			beliefs	1
			culture	2
			meaning of life/life perspective	2
			advice	1
	Doing chores together	1	washing dishes, cleaning up	1
	Emotional/psychological support	8	love	4
			care	15
			encourage/encouragement	13
			listen	5
			protection	1
Benefits of engaged fatherhood: benefits to children:	Effective leadership	2	motivate	2
			role model	2
	Caring for health	1		
	medical benefits	2	improves health	1
	social benefits	14	helps develop a clear life perspective	1
			helps grow into responsible adults	2
			improves life quality	1
			develops lifelong relationship	2
			helps form family values, beliefs, and maintain culture	8
			provides gender equity (for the future)	1
			provides knowledge and skills	2
	cognitive benefits	1	develops communication skills	2
			provides school retention and academic achievement	1+1
	psychological benefits		helps solve problems	1
			feeling of security	2
			shapes the character	1
			provides self-confidence / self-worth	5
benefits to fathers	increases their life quality when elderly, provides that their children care for them	2		
		1		
benefits to families and society	strengthens the relations/ families	6		
	provides safe environments	1		
Risks of the changed understanding of father's involvement/ engagement	feminization	2		
	barriers to career growth	3		
	social pressure	4		
Risks of father's excessive involvement	lack of child independence	1		
	disappointment in men who are not as caring as one's father	1		

Two interviewees mentioned they were brought up by relatives (the grandfather who was uninvolved and male relatives who were involved). One answer was vague, while six respondents had engaged fathers and one had financially involved and present fathers. So the interviewees had different experiences and could view the problem from different viewpoints.

One of the five involved male interviewees is not a father yet and one dropped the question. Three others view themselves as engaged fathers.

The fifth question sort of overlaps with the first one, that is why some respondents dropped it. However, one answer was really great: A first benefit there is for the growth of the children, i.e. to have a different example with which to deal from the first months of life (different in terms of play, sociability, imagination). It can have a great effect on the family and on the own partner (greater equity in the working career). And it can have an effect at a social level, deconstructing the male stereotype of virility and masculinity such as strength, courage, independence and working success, in favour of an idea that also includes affectivity, listening, and caring for loved ones (thus overcoming the teasing of Mr. Mum).

Concerning the risks of the changes in the engaged fatherhood understanding, social pressure (peer disapproval) and another social factor – barrier to career growth were named. On the whole, the attitude is such that the risks are minimal and they can be turned into opportunities.

## Discussion and limitations

The study came to conclusion that, although father involvement in children's lives is not a recent innovation, the accent on engagement rather than involvement is relatively new. While the term 'involvement' is basically associated with 'presence' and/or 'cohabitation' accompanied mostly with financial participation, 'engagement' includes availability, financial support, spending time together, educating, upbringing, doing chores together, emotional/psychological support, leadership, and healthcare. The study also defined the benefits and the risks of shared child care.

This is in line with the analyzed literature (Andersen, 2019; Azumah, 2018; Buehler & O'Brien, 2011; Cano et al., 2018; Heinrich, 2014; Henry et al., 2020; Jessee & Adamsons, 2018; Li, 2020; Miller et al., 2020; Pablo et al., 2021; Reily, 2021; Richter et al., 2010; Ros Pilarz, 2019). However, our study gave a more concise list of father engagement components than the above-mentioned articles one by one. Besides, the majority of studies neglect the risks associated with shared care. Keizer et al. (2019), for instance, mention only the impact of father involvement (or lack of it) dealing with passing the traditions of gender equality from generation to generation.

The limitations of the current research is related to the limited number of interviewees and the nature of the applied method, which does not enable generalization.

## Conclusion

Therefore, to increase father engagement in their children's development, it is essential to change the understanding of masculine role in the family from provider and organizer only to nurturing fatherhood (which does not exclude earning money for children's needs). Recent research has once again confirmed that

engaged fatherhood decreases their sons' aggressiveness and their daughters' stress. What is new in the findings it is that engaged (not, as it used to be in the past, involved) fatherhood which includes educational activities stimulates children's academic success. If the society wants to be a healthy one, it has to take various measures to support fathers' engagement: state-funded projects, popularizing the changed fatherhood model through media, etc.

Family structure (married / divorced / non-resident) is essential to more satisfied lives not only of children, but also their fathers. But even non-resident fathers should be engaged in their children's lives, otherwise irresponsibility will become a vicious circle. Family traditions also matter. When grandfathers are married to their grandmothers and involved in childcare, so normally are fathers.

There are many non-resident fathers in the contemporary world. Those of them who did not marry due to lack of care usually demonstrate lack of care to their outside-of-marriage children. Those who did not marry due to financial reasons only, however, tend to participate in their children's lives. It is essential that they do, as non-resident fathers' involvement has a positive impact on children's health, social and cognitive development like that of resident fathers.

Of course, father's work schedule has an impact on his involvement and relationships with children, but this means that the little time that fathers can dedicate to their children should be used as effectively as possible.

Parents' socio-economic status is related to their relationships with children. Due to this, special attention should be paid to low-SES fathers' involvement in their children's lives.

The legislation dealing with fathers' duties and rights related to care about/of their children can create a possibility for more balanced relations in the family, however, the attitude of the whole society needs to be changed to create conditions for the application of this legislation, and this is a slow and long voyage (Appendix 2).

## Chapter 9: Some tips, if you don't mind

Whether you are a genius or a very busy person, try to find time to spend with your child – care about his/her health, educate him/her, do some chores together, and, of course, enjoy yourselves – hold celebrations, play games, talk heart-to-heart or simply sit silently together, embraced.

Share with your child ideas/experiences of your job, probably, like in Japan, where they have open doors days in the companies, take your kid to your workplace once in a while. Who knows, maybe they have the same genetic inclination as you and will be happy to continue your work. But never *make* them follow your steps, because then they might hate you, your profession, and their own lives.

Very probably your children inherit your talents, but how would anybody know about it, unless you from very young years take them with you to your office, talk to them about your occupation (how important and good it is), ask them to help you with your work. Never press them, however, to follow your steps. If they become enthusiastic about it, they will do it themselves.



# Father's role in sons' and daughters' lives

Do some jobs *with* your children, but not *instead of* them. By doing the job instead of your child you spoil him/her and create some problems for their future.

Some pressure that your children work / study under is sometimes necessary before they get disciplined, but don't regularly make them do something if you see they hate it. Try to make it pleasant for them, if it doesn't help, maybe it's better for them to do some other job.

Knowledge is great, but life skills are more important, and they are not always provided at school. Don't forget to teach your children how to mend house things, wash the dishes, cook, and behave in public!

Don't try to make name or money at your children's expense. Keep in mind that they are children who need to relax and communicate with peers. Think about their benefits first of all. Let them be children!

Your kids need both your support and your criticism. Support, sure, first of all. And while you criticize, show that you want them to be even more successful that they are, but that you value their achievements.

Your kids should not become victims of conflicts between father and mother. Do your best to avoid conflicts. If it's impossible, take measures that children are unaware of these conflicts. Especially, if you decide to separate or divorce, do not make the kids a weapon of your fight. Do not pull them on your side. They love their mother, so if you want them to go on loving you, avoid as much as possible hurting her. To say nothing about the divorce situations when the man does his best to be the child's (children's) only guardian in order to revenge his ex-wife and not in order to protect the children from abusive or otherwise dangerous mother (be honest in front of yourself, defining the real reason!).

After divorce, if the child (children) stays (stay) with mother, the non-resident father often refuses to support financially the children. As pretext they say the ex-wife will spend the money on herself. Sometimes it is done as revenge, and sometimes, especially if the man marries another woman and has children with her, he becomes indifferent to his children from the previous marriage. Please, never use your children as a weapon in the war with the former wife! Even when/if they are their little copies, they are YOUR children, too, they are not guilty of what has happened between you and your wife, and they need your support – physical, emotional, and financial. Besides, believe me or not, it is also you who will benefit if you maintain close relationships with your children from previous marriage(s). It will be YOUR life that will be richer and full of sense.

The best way of upbringing your kids is not just telling them what is good and what is bad, but also behaving the way you hope they will behave in the future.

Some fathers are jealous / envious of their sons' success: they see rivals in them. Please, do not behave the way old Sigmund Freud believed 'people' do! Those guys are not 'people'! Both your sons and your daughters are your continuations! Be proud of them and tell them sometimes about it!

Creativity can develop both in art and science, even in everyday life. It is essential that fathers develop this creative atmosphere in the family, then children may from young years be involved in father's job, share his interests, and later support him and continue

his undertakings. Who can be a better follower of one's efforts than one's child (children)! It does not at all mean that parents should insist that children continue their matter, but it means trying to provide them with a creative atmosphere is essential for fathers who themselves are creative.

Do your best to perform all father's roles needed to make your child successful: the Early Learning Partner (from your child's early age, spend time together, cooperate in your child's games, learning and work), the "Flight Engineer" (keep an eye on what your child is doing to timely discover when/if s/he needs assistance), the Fixer (provide the resources – not only the financial ones – needed for your child's development), the Revealer (show him/her that the world is so wonderful), the Philosopher (help him/her understand how s/he and the world are made), the Model, the Negotiator and the GPS Navigational Voice (be an authority whom s/he will eagerly listen to).

If your kids do not share your professional interests, see, maybe, they will share your hobby or *you* can share their hobbies. This will make you closer.

You should love your children and be tender and caring with them, but do not spoil them, do not fulfil every caprice. Explain to them that you do not have the needed money or time, that they are not the only members of the family who have needs and desires, that you are doing your best to for them, but there are things that are beyond your power. And, what is especially important, teach them to care for you, too, to keep silent when you are working or do not feel well, to bring you the medicine, when needed, simply to sit by your side and keep your hand in theirs, etc.

Do not expect that a father will love his children, or children will love their father only due to their biological bonds. These relations are only partially based on biology, but they need to be developed patiently over years – by example, action, and talk.

Fathers should never blame children for doing things wrong – it's parents who are largely responsible for that – due to not teaching their kids the right things. Fathers should love their kids with an unconditional positive regard – not because they are their copies, smart, brave, strong, etc., but because they are their kids. It doesn't mean, however, not trying to do one's best to make them clever, educated, courageous, kind, honest, etc.

All normal fathers want their children's happiness. The problem is some of them mistake money and career for happiness and interfere rudely into their children's lives. Please, listen attentively to what your children say and want, do your best to understand them. If you deeply believe that they are wrong, try to persuade them, but never make the decisions for them. They have the right to make their own mistakes and to try to find their own way. Your duty is to support them, not to fight them.

To be a good father, one needs to know about both his duties and rights. Besides, to make his children happy, a man should not hurt their mother, either physically, or morally, at least in their presence, tell children bad things about her, as in this way he traumatizes their souls.

It is true that the father's education level enables him to help his children get a decent education. However, a less educated father can also have a positive impact on his kids' education, if he teaches them that knowledge and education are among the major values that a young person should have.

If your child is expecting a baby in too early age, do not teach him/her (in order to 'protect' them) how to get rid of this responsibility, teach them (desirably beforehand) how to be responsible for avoiding undesirable pregnancy and how to be responsible for the baby, if the pregnancy did occur.

If the spouses are citizens of different countries, before thinking of getting married (and later, of getting divorced) they need to be acquainted with the legislation of both countries concerning their guardianship, to avoid future battles and victims.

And finally – there is no one ideal Dad, but trying to be one is very fruitful. I would be very glad, if my book helps you to become a better father than you have been before reading it.

## Acknowledgments

I would like to express my gratitude to people who entrusted me their stories to be included in the book – without them the book would have been less interesting. I would also like to thank my friend Marina Zoranyan for supporting me in my effort and my former doctorate students and now colleagues Inga Tkemaladze and Ekaterine Tkavashvili for helping me to collect some translation materials. My warmest thanks go to the interviewees who volunteered to take part in the research.

## References

1. Lortkipanidze M. Socialuri urtiertobis istoriidan XII c. saqartveloshi (In Georgian: The history of social relationships). In *Saqartvelo rustavelis khanashi* (In Georgian: Georgia in Rustaveli Era), Tbilisi: Mecniereba; 1966:32–51.
2. Lordkipanidze MD, Hewitt GB. *Georgia in the XI–XII Centuries*. Tbilisi: Ganatleba Publishers; 1987.
3. Metreveli R. *Mepe tamari* [In Georgian: Queen Tamar]. Tbilisi: Ganatleba Publishers; 1992.
4. WQXR. (n.d.) *All my children — The family legacy of Johann Sebastian Bach*.
5. Oleskiewicz M. *J.S. Bach and his sons*. Chicago: University of Illinois Press; 2017.
6. Wolff C. *The new Bach reader: A life of Johann Sebastian Bach in letters and documents*. New York & London: Northon; 1999.
7. Meyer C. *In Mozart's shadow: His sister's story*. Orlando, FL: Harcourt; 2008.
8. Suchet J. *Mozart: The man revealed*. New York: Pegasus Books; 2017.
9. Gay P. *Mozart: A life*. New York: Penguin; 1999.
10. Suchet J. *The Last Waltz: The Strauss Dynasty and Vienna*. New York: St. Martin's Press; 2015.
11. Jacob H. *Johann Strauss. Father and Son – A Century of Light Music*. Toronto: Greystone Press; 1939.
12. Grenier C. Dumas, the prodigious: A profile of Alexandre Dumas. *The World and I*. 1998;13(6).
13. Healey B. *Real story of Dumas*. 2014.
14. Reiss T. Alexandre Dumas. Brief life of the soldier who inspired The Count of Monte Cristo: 1762-1806. *Harvard Magazine*. 2012.
15. Maurois A, Hopkins G (Translator). *The Titans. A three-generation biography of the Dumas*. New York: Harrer & Brothers Publishers; 1957.
16. Morales FR. Jawaharlal Nehru. In *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2016.
17. Menon R. Look for inspiration. *The Hindu*. 2013.
18. This letter by 21-yr-old Jawaharlal Nehru to his father on hair loss is going viral for obvious reasons! *The Indian Express*. 2016.
19. Mishra A, Vijayalaxmi P. Dictionary of National Biography. In Sen SP Editor. Calcutta: Institute of Historical Studies. 1974;297–300.
20. Nehru J. *Letters from a father to his daughter*. New Delhi: Indraprastha Press; 1994.
21. Frank K. *Indira: The life of Indira Nehru Gandhi*. Houghton Mifflin Books; 2002.
22. Hughes RG, Shaffer R. The Bhutto family and Pakistan: Power, politics, and the deep state. *Intelligence and National Security*. 2021;1–12.
23. Bhutto B. *Daughter of Destiny: An Autobiography*. New York: Simon and Schuster. 1989.
24. The Editors of Encyclopedia. *Zulfikar Ali Bhutto*. Encyclopedia Britannica. 2021a.
25. The Editors of Encyclopedia. *Benazir Bhutto*. Encyclopedia Britannica. 2021b.
26. Encyclopedia of World Biography. *Benazir Bhutto biography*. 2021.
27. Drayer RA. *Nicholas and Helena Roerich: The spiritual journey of two great artists and peacemakers*. Wheaton, IL: Quest Books; 2005.
28. Skumin VA, Aunovsky OK. *Svetonostsy* [In Russian: The bringers of the light]. Novocheboksarsk: Teros. 1995.
29. Nicholas Roerich Museum New York. *Biography*. 2021.
30. Kumar R. *Roerich's quest. The Hindu*. 2017.
31. Fred Schepisi. *It Runs in the Family*. 2003.
32. Hipes P. Michael Douglas on Dad Kirk Douglas: "To the world he was a legend...To me and my brothers he was simply Dad". *USA Today*. 2020.
33. Alexander B. Hollywood icon and 'Spartacus' star Kirk Douglas dies at 103, son Michael Douglas confirms. *USA Today*. 2020.
34. Michael Douglas. Biography.com Editors. 2020.
35. Michael Douglas. Britannica, the Editors of Encyclopedi. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2020.
36. Douglas K. *Life could be verse*. Deerfield Beach, FL: Health Communications. 2014.
37. Seemayr Z. Inside Kirk Douglas' relationship with son Michael Douglas. *ET*. 2020.
38. Truitt B. Five essential Kirk Douglas movies, from 'Paths of Glory' to (obviously) 'Spartacus'. 2020.
39. Holden S. Movie Review: Fathers, Sons, Grandsons. In the Script and Real Life 2003.
40. Celebrities. Mikhalkov Sergei Vladimirovich. 2021.
41. Harding L. Sergei Mikhalkov. 2009.
42. Pulver A. Andrei Konchalovsky: I'm very glad I failed in Hollywood. *The Guardian*. 2021.
43. Larsen P. Why 83-year-old Russian director Andrei Konchalovsky has two new films out now. *Los Angeles Daily News*. 2021.
44. Macnab G. Andrei Konchalovsky - The roots and rarities of a man of two worlds. *Independent*. 2011.

45. Khorishilova T. Egor Konchalovsky: I'm too, was a 'major'. 2020
46. Maris Liepa Charitable Foundation. The Laurence Olivier of the Ballet. With the sun in his blood. 2021a.
47. Andris Liepa, Maris Liepa Charitable Foundation. Andris Liepa opened the door to Europe. 2021b.
48. Mylandover. Andris Liepa biography divorce. Andris Liepa: "Family is the meaning of my life". 2020.
49. Ragozhina E. Andris Liepa [In Russian]. 2021.
50. Maris Liepa Charitable Foundation. Ilze Liepa. 2021c.
51. Otdohkni Imena. Liepa dynasty.
52. Malkin M. Liza Minnelli opens up about Mom Judy Garland, working with fosse and going to rehab. *Variety*. 2020.
53. Minnelli L. Liza remembers Vicente Minnelli. 1989.
54. Schechter S. Liza Minnelli. In *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021.
55. Dunayevsky, Isaak Osipovich. Encyclopedia of Russian History.
56. Goloperov V. Isaak Dunayevsky: The Red Mozart of Soviet Cinema. *The Odessa Review*. 2017.
57. Kultura RF. The wind of changes.
58. Durov VL. My animals. Moscow: Makhaon. 2013.
59. Jando D. The Durov dynasty.
60. Jando, D. Vladimir Durov.
61. Matthijs, GM. Mathématique et musique – Guy Béart. 1963.
62. Henley J. The Kiss of Death. *The Guardian*. 2007.
63. IMBD. Emmanuelle Beart. Biography. 1963.
64. Film Reference. Emmanuelle Béart biography. 1965.
65. Mannier T. Emmanuelle Béart évoque les critiques blessantes de son pere Guy Béart. *Femme Actuelle*. 2020
66. Vincelot S. Emmanuelle Béart: ce bouleversant hommage à son père qui voit enfin le jour. *Gala*. 2020.
67. Fox ST. So what "did" Muhammad Ali and Joe Frazier "really" think of women's boxing ...in...ah...1978? *Women Boxing Archive Network*. 2001.
68. Orda C. 5 Inspiring father-daughter athlete duos. 2018.
69. Rubin M. Muhammad Ali: 4 Ways He Changed America. *Rolling Stone*. 2016.
70. Ali L, Ritz D. Reach! Finding strength, spirit, and personal power. New York; Hyperion. 2002.
71. Eig J. *Ali: A life*. Boston; MA: Houghton Mifflin Harcourt. 2017.
72. Hines J. Historical Dictionary of Figure Skating. Plymouth, UK; Scarecrow Press. 2011.
73. Avdonina E. "I've got a cool daughter!" Who brought up Scherbakova, Zagitova and other figure skating stars. 2021.
74. Wilner B. Father, daughter coach figure skating at Olympics. *Taiwan News*. 2020.
75. Anatoly Tarasov. Britannica, the Editors of Encyclopedia. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021c.
76. Tarasov A. *Tarasov: The Father of Russian hockey: Hockey's rise to international prominence through the eyes of a coaching legend*. London; Griffin Pub Group. 1997.
77. Campbell K. Happy 100th birthday, Anatoly Tarasov: The incredible lasting legacy of the Russian coaching legend. *The Hockey News*. 2018.
78. Franke, G. Epic Confrontation: Canada vs. Russia on ice, the greatest sports drama of all-time. New York; 2018.
79. Celebrities. Tatiana Tarasova.
80. Fedorova L. Tatiana Tarasova: "Not every person can be made a great athlete". *FS Gossips*. 2021.
81. Tatiana Tarasova. London Speaker Bureau.
82. Pierre Curie. Britannica, the Editors of Encyclopedia *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021d.
83. Marie Curie. Britannica, the Editors of Encyclopedia. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021e.
84. Curie E. Madame Curie. *A Biography*. Boston: MA: Da Capo Press. 2001.
85. Bonilis L. Irene Curie.
86. Frédéric, Irène Joliot Curie. Britannica, the Editors of Encyclopaedia. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2019.
87. Irene Joliot Curie.
88. Redniss L. Radioactive: Marie and Pierre Curie: A tale of love and fallout. 1st ed. New York: Harper Entertainment. 2010.
89. Jungnickel C, McCormach R. Introduction: The Problem of Cavendish. 2016.
90. Berry AJ. Henry Cavendish. His Life and Scientific Work. London: Hutchinson. 1960.
91. Henry Cavendish. History of Science and Technology. 1810.
92. West J, Henry Cavendish (1731–1810): Hydrogen, carbon dioxide, water, and weighing the world. *American Journal of Physiology, Lung Cellular and Molecular Physiology*. 2014;307:L1–L6.
93. Kojevnikov A. Pyotr Leonidovich Kapitsa. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021.
94. Kapitsa SP. My memoirs. Moscow; ACT. 2016.
95. Serguei P Kapitsa. Obituary of Sergei Kapitsa. *Physics Today*. 2012.
96. Gay P. Freud: A Life for Our Time. London; JM. Dent & Sons: 1988.
97. Jay ME. Sigmund Freud. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021,
98. Freud Museum. *Anna Freud's early life*. 2018.
99. Anna Freud. The Editors of Encyclopedia Britannica. *Anna Freud*. Encyclopedia Britannica. 2019.
100. Young Bruehl E. Anna Freud: A Biography. London; Yale University Press. 2008.
101. Bruce RV. *Bell: Alexander Bell and the conquest of solitude*. Ithaca, New York: Cornell University Press; 1990.
102. Hochfelder D. Alexander Graham Bell. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021.
103. Blagoy D Dimitriyevich. Aleksandr Pushkin. Encyclopedia Britannica. 2021.
104. Bukker I. *Pozdnyaya lyubov Natalyi Goncharovoy* [In Russian: The late love of Natalia Goncharova]. 2012.
105. Pushkin Museum. (n.d.). *Bystro pereshla besyonok tasha iz detstva v zreliy vozrast* [Fast has our little devil Tasha moved from childhood into mature age].



106. Tarasova E. How many children did Pushkin have?. The Free Dictionary. 1979.
107. Ferguson RF, Robertson T. *The Formula: Unlocking the Secrets to Raising Highly Successful Children*. Kindle Edition. Dallas, TX: BenBella Books. 2019.
108. Ferguson R, Robertson T. *Ron Ferguson and Tasha Robertson's "Formula"*. 2019.
109. Le V. *How do you raise a genius? Researchers say they've found the secret to successful parenting*. 2019.
110. American Museum of Natural History. (n.d.). *Family roots*.
111. Kaku M. Albert Einstein. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021.
112. Holguin E, Nardi W. A stepfather, adoptive father, and biological father, Thomas More is a model for all dads. 2020.
113. Pappas S. Doting dads: 6 of history's finest fathers. 2012.
114. TR Center. Theodore Roosevelt Sr. 1878.
115. Darwin Ch. *Autobiography of Charles Darwin and selected letters*. Dover Publications: 1958.
116. University of Cambridge. Darwin and fatherhood. 2021.
117. Quote Inverstigator. When I was a boy of fourteen, my father was so ignorant.
118. Mark Twain House Museum. Twain's children. 2021.
119. Qvirk TV. Mark Twain. *Britannica*. 1894.
120. DI Mendelev Museum Archive. There is no greater happiness – Mendelev and his children.
121. Woods G. Mendelev - the man and his legacy. *Royal Society of Chemistry*. 2007.
122. Trigorova Mendeleva OD. Mendelev and his family. Moscow: USSR Academy of Sciences Publishers: 1947.
123. Russkiy Mir. Pushkin Museum of Fine Arts founder Ivan Tsvetaev was born 170 years ago. 2017.
124. Tsvetaev. Ivan Vladimirovich. 1979.
125. Zharikova M. Ivan Vladimirovich Tsvetaev and his museum. 2016.
126. Klimova E. The Tsvetayev family and Tarusa. 2008.
127. Efron A. No love without poetry. The memoirs of Marina Tsvetaeva's daughter. (transl by Ignashev DN )Evanston: ILL: Northwestern University Press. 2009.
128. Fokin PE. Tsvetaeva without gloss. St.Petersburg: Amphora. 2008.
129. Deutsche Welle. Master of the chanson Charles Aznavour dead at 94. 2018.
130. The Guardian. Charles Aznavour obituary.
131. Yuri Gagarin. Britannica. Team of Editors of Encyclopedia. *Encyclopedia Britannica*.
132. Kovalsky A, Yuri Gagarin. 1934.
133. Popova Yu. Is it true that Yuri Gagarin's father collaborated with German occupants?.
134. Radio Vera. Yuri Gagarin and his parents. 2021.
135. Kovalsky A, Yuri Gagarin.
136. Conger C. 10 famous fathers. 2012.
137. Brainy quote. *Jaques Ives Cousteau*.
138. Paisner D, Cousteau JM. My father, the captain: My life with Jacques Cousteau. *National Geographic*. 2010.
139. Stephen Hawking. Britannica. Team of Editors of Encyclopedia. *Encyclopedia Britannica*. 2021.
140. Clark S. A brief history of Stephen Hawking: A legacy of paradox. 2018.
141. Hawking R. Eulogy for My Father. 2018.
142. McKay R. Stephen Hawking has kids? An inside look on the family. 2021.
143. Royal Examiner. Notable famous fathers. 2019.
144. World Para Athletics. Greek father and son making Paralympic history. 2021.
145. Shakespeare W. King Leer.
146. Burchm DL. *Literary Criticism of Shakespeare's King Leer*. MA thesis. Charleston ILL: Eastern Illinois University; 1966.
147. De Balzac H. Father Goriot. Project Gutenberg e-book. 2010.
148. Schiller F. Don Carlos: A play. Good Press; Kindle edition. 2019.
149. Gogol NV. Taras Bulba and other stories. Project Gutenberg e-book. 2017.
150. Taras Bulba story by Gogol. The Editors of Encyclopedia Britannica.
151. Tolstoy L. War and Peace (transl. by Louise & Aylmer Maude). Project Guttenberg e-book.
152. Austen J. Pride and Prejudice. Project Gutenberg e-book.
153. Sholokhov M. The Fate of a Man and Early Stories.
154. Baraban E. "The Fate of a Man" by Sergei Bondarchuk and the Soviet cinema of trauma. *The Slavic and East European Journal*. 2007;51(3):514–534.
155. Serge. 1960.
156. Reviews on Soldier's Father.
157. Father of a soldier. 1964.
158. Father of a soldier. Awards. 1964
159. Blood ties. 1964.
160. The Children of Don Quixote. 1966.
161. Reviews on The Children of Don Quixote.
162. Livejournal. Family ties: The light in the window.
163. Sting.Russians.
164. The Comdads. Trailer. 1983.
165. My father my hero. 1991.
166. The Fugitives. 1986.
167. The Fugitives. Trailer. 1986.
168. 10 days with Dad. 2020.
169. Kramer vs. Kramer. Britannica. Editors of Encyclopedia. 2019.
170. Tobias S. Kramer vs Kramer at 40: A flawed film that remains a deserving classic. 2019.
171. Kramer vs. Kramer. Movie script. 1979.
172. 'Mrs. Doubtfire' Review: Nanny Doesn't Know Best. New York Times. 2021..

173. Mrs. Doubtfire. 1993.
174. What a Girl Wants. 2003.
175. What a Girl Wants. 2003.
176. What a Girl Wants. Official trailer. 2003.
177. Kiryanova A. Cruel fathers of great people. 2019.
178. Andreyev N. Ivan the Terrible. Encyclopedia Britannica. 2021.
179. Perry BP. Why was Ivan so terrible?
180. Gashkov I. The Tsar raises his walking stick over his head: Did Ivan the Terrible murder his son?
181. Twain M. Adventures of Huckleberry Finn. 1885.
182. Nabokov V. Lolita. 2015.
183. Connolly J. A Reader's Guide to Nabokov's "Lolita". Boston; Academic Studies Press; 2009.
184. Dostoevsky F. The Brothers Karamazov(transl. Pevear, R. & Volokhonsky, L.). International Kindle Whitepaper. 2002.
185. Saraskina LI. Dostoyevsky [In Russian]. Moscow; Molodaya Gvardia. 2013
186. Grossman L. Dostoyevsky Feodor Mikhailovich [In Russian]. Moscow; Molodaya Gvardiya. 1963.
187. Yermilov V. Chekhov [In Russian]. Moscow; Molodaya Gvardiya. 1951.
188. Yermilov VV. In childhood I did not have childhood.
189. Father and son Dumas: factory of novels
190. Vinogradov AK. Blaming Paganini. Kaliningrad; Yantarniy Skaz. 2001.
191. Predota G. The dangers of being a musical prodigy. Antonio Paganini: Musical Father from Hell. 2017.
192. Karl Pavlovich Bryullov. Britannica, Editors of Encyclopedia. Encyclopedia Britannica. 2021.
193. Khudozhnik Karl Pavlovich Bryullov.
194. Hašek Jaroslav. 2018
195. Jaroslav Hašek. Britannica, Editors of Encyclopedia. Encyclopedia Britannica.
196. Esaulova A. Carl Larsson. 2022.
197. Yegorov O. In Stalin's shadow: How did the lives of his family turn out? 2017.
198. Brezhneva L. The World I Left Behind: Pieces of a Past. New York; Random House; 1995.
199. Benjamin Spock. Britannica, Editors of Encyclopedia. Encyclopedia Britannica. 2021.
200. Kochakian MJ. Public vs. private: Dr. Spock, Mr. Hyde editors. Washington Post. 1998.
201. Fortescue A. Woman who was raped by her father as a child speaks out about 'humiliating' abuse. 2021.
202. Smith T. Exclusive: Brave teen, 18, who was sexually abused by her dad as a BABY. 2022.
203. History.com. Father's day. 2022.
204. Father's Day. Britannica. Editors of Encyclopedia. Encyclopedia Britannica. 2021.
205. Lindahl B. Nordic nuances regarding whistleblowers and paternity leave. 2022.
206. E justice Europa. Parental responsibility – child custody and contact rights. 2020.
207. Øresunddirekts Informationcenter. Parental leave in Sweden. 2021.
208. Wikipedia. Father's day.
209. Tamm M. Fathers' Parental Leave-Taking, Childcare Involvement and Mothers' Labor Market. Bonn, Germany; IZA Institute of Labour Economics. 2018.
210. Ministry of Manpower. A Singapore Government Agency Website. Paternity leave. 2021.
211. Clewett Lawyers. Fathers' rights in a divorce. 2015.
212. Merel J. Understanding how to divorce a foreign-born spouse. 2021.
213. Ferguson C. Do teenagers have a human right to consensual sexual activity? The Guardian. 2010.
214. Richards M. Why the age of sexual consent continues to be a worldwide challenge. The Conversation. 2018.
215. Hanif A. Top 10 most youngest fathers in the world who became famous later on. Wealthy Celebrity. 2022.
216. Mills J. Indian named 'world's oldest dad' after fathering a child at 96 dies aged 104 when his bed catches fire while he has a smoke. Mail Online. 2020.
217. TimeLinx. Fatherhood to the extreme 5 men who fathered the most children. 2021.
218. Kelly T. British scientist 'fathered 600 children' by donating sperm at his own fertility clinic. Mail Online. 2012.
219. Bard AJ, Inzelt G, Scholz F. Electrochemical Dictionary. 2<sup>nd</sup> ed. Berlin; Springer. 2012.
220. Fact-Archive Encyclopedia. Quantum Electrochemistry. 2005.
221. McNeal RB. Parent involvement, academic achievement and the role of student attitudes and behaviors as mediators. *Universal Journal of Educational Research*. 2014;2(8):564–576.
222. Lee JS, Bowen NK. Parent involvement, cultural capital, and the achievement gap among elementary school children. *American Educational Research Journal*. 2006;43(2).
223. Patel N, Stevens S. Parent–teacher–student discrepancies in academic ability beliefs: Influences on parent involvement. *The School Community Journal*. 2006;20(2):115–136.
224. Domina T. Leveling the home advantage: Assessing the effectiveness of parent involvement in elementary school. *Sociology of Education*. 2005;78:233–249.
225. El Nokali N, Bachman H, Votruba Drzal H. Parent involvement and children's academic and social development in elementary school. *Child Dev*. 2010;81(3):988–1005.
226. Goldman R. Fathers' involvement in their children's education. London; National Family and Parenting Institute. 2005.
227. Şad SN, Gürbuzturk O. Primary schools' parents' level of involvement into their children's education. *Educational Sciences: Theory and Practice*. 2013;13(3):1006–1011.
228. Bronfenbrenner U. The biological model from a life course perspective: Relations of the participant. In Moen P, Elder JH, Luscher K, editors. *Examining Lives in Context*. Washington; DC: American Psychological Association. 1995;599–618.

229. Sullaway M, Christensen A. Assessment of dysfunctional interaction patterns in couples. 1983. *Journal of Marriage and Family*. 1983;45(3):653–660.
230. Runcan PL. The time factor: Does it influence the parent-child relationship? *Procedia -Social and Behavioral Sciences*. 2012;33: 11–14.
231. Model S. Housework by husbands: Determinants and implications. *Journal of Family Issues*. 1981;2:225–237.
232. Fagan J, Iglesias A. Father involvement program effects on fathers, father figures and their Head Start children: A quasi-experimental study. *Early Childhood Research Quarterly*. 1999;14:243–269.
233. Gürşimşek I, Kefi S, Girgin G. An Investigation of the Variables Related to the Participation Level of Fathers in Preschool Education. *Journal of Hacettepe*. University Faculty of Education. 2007;33:181–191.
234. Marsiglio W. Contemporary scholarship on fatherhood: Culture, identity, and conduct. *Journal of Family Issues*. 1993;14:484–509.
235. Roopnarine JL, Ahmeduzzaman M. Puerto Rican fathers' involvement with their preschool age children. *Hispanic Journal of Behavioral Sciences*. 1993;15(1):96–107.
236. Yeung WJ, Sandberg JF, Davis Kean PE, et al. Children's time with fathers in intact families. *Journal of Marriage and Family*. 2001;63:136–154.
237. Radin N. Child rearing fathers in intact families. *Merrill-Palmer Quarterly*. 1981;27:489–514.
238. Harris KM, Morgan SP. Fathers, sons and daughters differential paternal involvement in parenting. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*. 1991;53:531–544.
239. Fagan, J. Predictors of father and father figure involvement in pre-kindergarten head start. Philadelphia: National Centre of Fathers and Families. 1999.
240. Lopez V. An exploratory study of Mexican-origin fathers' involvement in their child's education: The role of linguistic acculturation. *School Community Journal*. 2007;17(1):61–76.
241. Hidalgo NM. Latino/a families' epistemology. In Pedraza P, Rivera M, editors. *Latino education: An agenda for community action research*. Mahwah, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum. 2005;375–402.
242. Quiñones S, Kiyama JM. Against the current: The role of Latino fathers in family - school engagement. *School Community Journal*. 2014;24(1):149–176.
243. Klein A. From Mao to Memphis: Chinese immigrant fathers' involvement with their children's education. *The School Community Journal*. 2008;18(2):91–117.
244. The condition of education. National Center for Education Statistics. Washington; DC.: US Department of Education. Office for Educational research and Improvement & NCES. 1997.
245. Unal Z, Unal Z. Investigating the correlation between gender of the teacher and fathers' parental involvement in elementary classrooms. *Contemporary Issues in Education Research*. 2010;3(3):1–8.
246. Davidovitch N, Yavich R. Technology-related involvement: the effect of the MASHOV system on parent involvement in Israeli junior highs. *Journal of International Education Research*. 2015;11(4):243–252.
247. Levine JA. Involving fathers in Head Start: A framework for public policy and program development. *Families in Society*. 1993;74(1):4–19.
248. Freud S. Civilisation and its discontents. In J Strachey, editor. *The Standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud*. London; Hogarth Press. 1961;21:57–145.
249. Wordsworth W. "Father! – to God himself we cannot give a holier name."
250. Confucius quote. The father who does not teach his son his duties is equally guilty with the son who neglects them.
251. Hugo V.
252. Engle, Leonard. Fathers as parenting parents. In Bruce, J. et al. *Families in focus: New perspectives. Fathers and children*. New York: Population Council. 1995;49–69.
253. Lamb ME. Paternal influences and the father's role: A personal perspective. *American Psychologist*. 1979;34:938–943.
254. Gadsden VL, Rethemeyer RK. Bay Area Fatherhood Initiatives: Portraits and Possibilities. Philadelphia: Pennsylvania University. *National Center on Fathers and Families*. 2021.
255. Nettle D. Why do some dads get more involved than others? Evidence from a large British cohort. *Evolution and Human Behavior*. 2008;29:416–423.
256. Lamb ME, Pleck JH, Charnov EL, et al. Paternal behavior in humans. *American Zoology*. 1985;25:883–894.
257. Hirsch D. *Illinois fathers' resource guide*. Second Ed. Chicago: Illinois Fatherhood Initiative. 1999.
258. Pleck JH. *Changing fatherhood*. Wellesley, MA, Wellesley College Center for Research on Women. 1984.
259. Lamb ME, Pleck JH, Charnov E, et al. A biosocial perspective on paternal behavior and involvement. In Lancaster, JB Altmann, J Rossi AS, Sherrod LR, editors. *Parenting across the Lifespan: Biosocial Dimensions*. 1987;111–142.
260. Nsamenang AB. Fathers, Families, & Child Well-Being in Cameroon: A Review of the Literature. Philadelphia: Pennsylvania University. *National Center on Fathers and Families*. 2000.
261. Butler JB. Being there: Exploring the fatherhood experiences and beliefs of low-income urban African American males. *University of Pittsburgh ProQuest Dissertations Publishing*. 2000;9945079.
262. Levant RF. *Fathers and daughters*. Greater Boston Fatherhood Forum. Boston, MA. 2013.
263. Akkok F. Parental involvement in the educational system: To empower parents to become more knowledgeable and effective. *Central Asia Regional Literacy Forum*. 1999;22–25.
264. Fletcher R. Bringing fathers to family services. *Every Child*. 2005;1(11):17.
265. Hughes B, Fisher D. Children's centres. *Father Work*. 2006;4(2):4–7.
266. Fathers Direct. The Dad Pack. 2006.
267. CAF (Contact a family). *Fathers factsheet*. London: Contact a Family. 2005.
268. Towers C. Recognising fathers. 2009.
269. Mitchell P. The Future of fatherhood. *Children's Voice*. 2006;15(6):31.
270. Drummond, M., Reich, K. *Fathers matter: What community foundations can do*. The Coalition of Community Foundations for Youth. 2001;202:434–4770.
271. Guven G, Basic F. Investigation of the effect of family education and family participation programs using different educational models on the opinions of parents. 2018;53(2):613–636.
272. Buehler C, O'Brien M. Mothers' part-time employment: Associations with mother and family well-being. *J Fam Psychol*. 2011;25(6):895–906.



273. Heinrich CJ. Parents' employment and children's wellbeing. *Future Child*. 2014;24(1):121–146.
274. Meier A, Musick K, Fischer J, et al. Mothers' and fathers' well-being in parenting across the arch of child development. *J Marriage Fam*. 2018;80(4):992–1004.
275. Petts RJ, Shafer KM, Essig L. Does adherence to masculine norms shape fathering behavior? *Marriage and Family*. 2018;80(3):704–720.
276. Hunter SC, Riggs DW, Augoustinos M. Hegemonic masculinity versus a caring masculinity: Implications for understanding primary caregiving fathers. *Social and Personality Psychology Compass*. 2017;11(2):12307.
277. Azumah FD, Krampah S, Nachinaab JO. Effects of family structure on the academic performance of children: A case study of Ayeduse R/C Junior High School in the Kumasi Metropolis, Ghana. *International Journal of Social Science Studies*. 2018;6(10):11–22.
278. Henry JB, Julion WA, Bounds DT, et al. Fatherhood matters: An integrative review of fatherhood intervention research. *J Sch Nurs*. 2020;36(1):19–32.
279. Jessee V, Adamsons K. Father involvement and father-child relationship quality: An intergenerational perspective. *Parent Sci Pract*. 2018;18(1):28–44.
280. Hamilton BE, Martin JA, Sutton PD. Births: Preliminary data for 2003. *Natl Vital Stat Rep*. 2004;53(9):1–17.
281. Augustine JM, Nelson T, Edin K. Why do poor men have children? Fertility intentions among low-income unmarried U.S. fathers. *Annals of American Academy of Political and Social Science*. 2009;624:99–117.
282. Maes Thielemans Tretyakova. Does divorce penalize elderly fathers in receiving help from their children? Evidence from Russia. In Mortelmans D, editor. *Divorce in Europe*. Switzerland; Springer: 2020;167–182.
283. Jenkinson S, Matsuo H, Matthis K. In Mortelmans D, editor. *Divorce in Europe*. Switzerland; Springer: 2020;211–236.
284. Maslauskaitė A, Tereškinas A. Quality of non-resident father-child relationships: Between “caring for” and “caring about”. In Mortelmans D, editor. *Divorce in Europe*. Switzerland; Springer: 2020;291–311.
285. Ros Pilarz A, Cuesta L, Drazen Y. Nonstandard work schedules and father involvement among resident and nonresident fathers. *J Marriage Fam*. 2019;82(2):587–604.
286. Reilly L. First nations' men experiencing fatherhood. *International Journal of men's Social and Community Health*. 2021;4(1):92–102.
287. Baldwin S, Malone M, Murrells T, et al. A mixed-methods feasibility study of an intervention to improve men's mental health and wellbeing during their transition to fatherhood. *BMC Public Health*. 2021;1813.
288. Leach LS, Poyser C, Cooklin AR, et al. Prevalence and course of anxiety disorders (and symptom levels) in men across the perinatal period: a systematic review. *J Affect Disord*. 2016;190:675–686.
289. Paulson JF, Bazemore SD. Prenatal and postpartum depression in fathers and its association with maternal depression: A meta-analysis. *JAMA*. 2010;303(19):1961–1969.
290. Li X. Fathers' involvement in Chinese societies: Increasing presence, uneven progress. *Child Development Perspectives*. 2020;14(3):150–156.
291. Cano T, Perales F, Baxter J. A matter of time: Father involvement and child cognitive outcomes. *Parent-Child Relationships*. 2018;81(1):164–184.
292. Miller DP, Thomas MMC, Waller MR, et al. Father involvement and socioeconomic disparities in child academic outcomes. *Journal of Marriage and Family*. 2020;82(2):515–533.
293. Ball J, Moselle K, Pedersen S. *Father's involvement as a determinant of child health*. Canada: The Public Health Agency of Canada. 2007.
294. Marsiglio W, Amato P, Day RD, et al. Scholarship on fatherhood in the 1990's and beyond. *Journal of Marriage and Family*. 2000;62:1173–1191.
295. Pleck JH. Why could father involvement benefit children? Theoretical Perspectives. *Applied Development Science*. 2007;11:196–202.
296. SarKadi A, Kristiansson R, Oberklaid F, et al. Fathers' involvement and children's developmental outcomes: a systematic review of longitudinal studies. *Acta Paediatr*. 2007;97(2):153–158.
297. Stanfors M, Larsson C. *SPLASH-db.eu (2014): Policy: Family policies*: Sweden; 2014.
298. Cools S, Fiva JH, Kirkeboen, LJ. Causal effects of paternity leave on children and parents. *The Scandinavian Journal of Economics*. 2015;117(3):801–828.
299. Andersen SH. Paternity leave and the motherhood penalty: New causal evidence. *Journal of Marriage and Family*. 2019;80(5):1125–1143.
300. Gnewski M. Sweden's parental leave may be generous, but it's tying women to the home. *The Guardian*. 2019.
301. Peukert A. ‘Little children are not for dad's?’ Challenging and undoing hegemonic masculinity. *Gender, Work, and Organization*. 2018;26(10):1451–1566.
302. Kangas E, Lämsä AM, Jyrkinen M. Is fatherhood allowed? Media discourses of fatherhood in organizational life. *Gender, Work, and Organization*. 2019;26(10):1433–1450.
303. Wells L, Cooper M, Dozois E, et al. Half the equation: Why fathers are just as important as mothers in preventing domestic violence in the next generation. Issue Brief No. 2. Calgary, AB: The University of Calgary, Shift: The Project to End Domestic Violence. 2014.
304. Dozois E, Wells L, Exner Cortens D, et al. No Man Left Behind: How and why to include fathers in government-funded parenting strategies. Calgary, AB: The University of Calgary: Shift: The Project to End domestic Violence. 2016.
305. Richter L, Chikovore J, Makusha T. The status of fatherhood and fathering in South Africa. *Child Educ*. 2010;86(6): 360–365.
306. Morrell R. Baba: Men and fatherhood in South Africa. Cape Town; HSRC Press. 2006.
307. Pablo LA, Erkhembayar R, Davison CM. Father presence, father engagement, and specific health and developmental outcomes of Mongolian pre-school children. *Children*. 2021;8(7).
308. George T. Exploratory research: Definition, guide, & examples. 2021.
309. Andrade C. The inconvenient truth about convenience and purposive samples. *Indian J Psychol Med*. 2021;43(1):86–88.
310. Keizer R, Lissa C, Tiemeier H, Lukassen N. The influence of fathers and mothers equally sharing childcare responsibilities on children's cognitive development from early childhood to school age: An overlooked mechanism in the intergenerational transmission of (dis)advantages? *European Sociological Review*. 2019;36(1):1–15.